

**buRe gndR I iex`bv\_ VvKzi i tQW Mti mgvRiPI:**  
**Zjbvqj-K chqj vPbv**

*(Social sketch delineated in the short stories of Naguib Mahfouz and Rabindranath Tagore : A comparative study)*

*(XvKv vekte`vj tq Avi ex vel tq Gg. wdj wvMÓAR#bi Rb` Dc`vncZ)*

**Avfm>`f©**



**ZËjeavqK**

*W. ggv#s ZvRj Bmj vg*  
*mnKvi x Aa`vcK, Avi ex vefvM*  
**XvKv vekte`vj q**

**MteIK**

*gvv#s vqRvby i ngvb*  
*ti vRt÷kb : 154/2015-16*  
*Avi ex vefvM*  
**XvKv vekte`vj q**

**XvKv-1000, evsj vt`k|**  
**btf#t 2018**

## †NvI YvCÎ

Avig w̄b̄ēŷi Krix G g†g©†NvI Yv KiwQ, XvKv w̄ekāē`vj tq Avix w̄el†q Gg.wdj  
w̄w̄w̄ Rb̄ Dc̄w̄cZ b̄w̄Re ḡndR I iex`bv\_ Vw̄Kzi tQw M†i mgvRvPÎ:  
**Zj̄bv̄j-K ch̄j v̄Pbv** (Social sketch delineated in the short stories of Naguib  
Mahfouz and Rabindranath Tagore : A comparative study)-kxl R Awfm̄`f̄w̄  
Av̄gvi GKK I tḡŷij K M†el YvKḡ Avig Bw̄Zc̄ē©G Awfm̄`†f̄P†Kv†bv Ask (cY©  
w̄Ksev Av̄s̄w̄kK) †Kv\_vI c̄K̄v̄k Kwi w̄b/

(ḡŷv̄ŷ w̄gRv̄b̄j i ngv̄b)

Gg.wdj M†el K

Avix w̄efv̄M, XvKv w̄ekāē`vj q

XvKv-1000, eisj v†`k/

†i w̄R† ÷ kb b̄w̄† I w̄k̄ȳvel.©154/2015-16/



## KZÁZv cĀĀk

ŌbvīRe gvndR I iek`bv\_ VvKzi i tQvU Mġī mgvRīPĪ: Zġbvġj-K chġj vPbīŌ Gg. ūdj MġelYvi Rb` G ūelq I ūkġivbvġū ūbifcY I ūbaġY Kiv t\_ġK i iæ Kġi Gi ifġiLv `Zīi KiY, MŠĕ` c\_ ūbī ŊKiY Ges Pevšġj tÿ` DcbxZ nevi cŌqvRbxq c\_- ūġ` Rbvīmn Gi ga`Kvi cŌZīU ūelġq Avgvi kŌ×q ZĒġeavqK W. gġvŋ ZvRġj Bmj vġ m`vi Zūi AūfÁZvcŲ°Ávb-fvġvi t\_ġK hvicibvB AevīZ `vb Kġi Ges MġelYv m`úbae Kivi Rb` ŷġY ŷġY tcŌYv I tcŌYv ūġq AvgvġK I MġelYvKgġK KZÁZvcvġk Ave× KġiġŌb| gnvb Avj ūni `ievġi m`ġīi Zġi Gi mġelĒg cŌZ`vb Kvgbv KiūQ|

MġelYvKġgġ ūefvbae chġq ūefvMġq kŌ×q ūkÿKgġj xi AġġKB AvgvġK Drmīn, Dġīxcbv Ges mġivġkŲ ġq Avšġi K mnġhūMZv Kġi G Kūb KgġK mnġR KiYxq Ges mvġġb Pjvi c\_ t` ūLġġŌb| ūefvMġq tPqvig`vb Avgvi kŌ×q ūkÿK Aa`vcK W. tġvŋŋ BDŌzī m`vi Avgvi Gg.ūdj Aūfm`f°Pevšġ chġq Gġb t`qvi cŌvġZ Avšġi K mnġhūMZv KġiġŌb| ūġkI Kġi ūefvMġq ūmūbqi Aa`vcK W. G ūe Gg ūŌvī Kġ ingvb ūbRvġx m`ġīi , iāMġi ū` Kūġ`Rbv G MġelYvKgġK m`úv`b KiġZ mnvqZv KġiġŌ| mgġq Amġġq Avgvi kŌ×q ūkÿK Aa`vcK W. tġv. Ave`jy Kūi i m`vi ū\_ūmm `Zīi i KvġR mġivġkŲ ġġġŌb| GŌvovI mnġhūMx Aa`vcK W. hġvBi gġvŋŋ Gnmvġj nK, W. tġvŋŋŋ knx`jy Bmj vġ, W. gġv. ūġRvġj ingvb I mnKvix Aa`vcK W. gġv. i ūdKġ Bmj vġ m`vi I eŪzi mnKvix Aa`vcK gġvŋŋŋ Avājy ġvbūb ūġqvīR-Gi bvġ KZÁZvi mġ\_ `šīY KiūQ|

Avi I kŌvġġi `šīY KiūQ, Avgvi ūcZv gġvŋŋŋ gġRej ingvb I ġvZv Rvġj v LvZġġK- hvīv AvgvġK AvġġKi GB Ae`vġb tcŌŌ t`qvi Rb` meB KġiġŌb| Avgvi ūcŌ mnaġġx i ūngv LvbgI AvgvġK bvīvġġe Drmīn ūġq mnvqZv KġiġŌ| cvkvcvġk MġelYvnmvqK AġbK Z\_`DcvĒ msMŌ Kivi tÿġġ , iāZcŲ°fġġKv tiġLġŌ| ġmBmġ\_ G MġelYvKgġm`úv`ġb ūbišġi ūbievŲbŋecvīġek `Zīi Kġi t`qvi jġÿ` mvsūvī K hvēZxq Svġġj v t\_ġK h\_v m`e AvgvġK `ġi tiġLġŌ| meġkġI AġbK cŌZKj-Zv tcvīġq G MġelYvKgġmgvB Kivi tZšġdK `vb Kivi Rb` gnvb Avj ūni AR`AMūYZ i Kūi qv Ávcv KiūQ|

**mPcĪ**

Aa'iq	iel qe <sup>-</sup>	côv
<b>cŪg Aa'iq</b>	<b>buRe gndtRi Rxebx</b>	
cŪg cui t'Q`	Rb†I ejj`Kvj	2
∅Zxq cui t'Q`	Aa`qb	4
ZZxq cui t'Q`	mun†Z`i n†ZLw	7
PZZ <sup>c</sup> cui t'Q`	cui c° tj LK intmte AvZ†cKvk	9
	iek†mun†Z` g†bwbtek	11
	uj Lubi t†y†Ī Kj †KŠkj	13
	†b†ej cij`vi I Zpv ūm††bi gŠē`	14
<b>∅Zxq Aa'iq</b>	<b>iek`bv_ V†K†i i Rxebx</b>	
cŪg cui t'Q`	Rb†I ejj`Kvj	16
	Abio†† Rxebh†cb	18
∅Zxq cui t'Q`	Aa`qb	19
	MZub†h†ZK ik†ve`e`vi c†Z Ab†v	20
	†g†R††bi K†qK†w †š†Z	22
	GK Ab`i Kg Avb`	25
ZZxq cui t'Q`	munZ`RM†Z c†ek	27
	Kve`m††i t†c†Yv	28
	ve`†m†††i i m†½ mv†v	31
	M††i i c†Z AvK††	32
PZZ <sup>c</sup> cui t'Q`	cui YZ mun†Z`K intmte iek†v	35
	fvi Zx cui K†q tj L††j †L	36
	†c††bv_ †m††bi ms`†k††††	39
	L`w†Zg†b K†ve iek`bv_	42
ZZxq Aa'iq	buRe gndtRi K†qK†w †Q†UM††i i ch††j †Pbv	44
cŪg cui t'Q`	iel qe <sup>-</sup>	64
∅Zxq cui t'Q`	†Q†UM††i m†g†wRK †K	68

<b>PZzAa</b> <i>iq</i>	<i>ie</i> <i>bv</i> <i>Vk</i> <i>i</i> <i>K</i> <i>tq</i> <i>K</i> <i>W</i> <i>tQ</i> <i>UM</i> <i>t</i> <i>i</i> <i>ch</i> <i>t</i> <i>j</i> <i>v</i> <i>P</i> <i>b</i> <i>v</i>	71
<b>c</b> <i>g</i> <i>cui</i> <i>t</i> <i>"</i> <i>Q</i> <i>`</i>	<i>tQ</i> <i>UM</i> <i>t</i> <i>i</i> <i>ie</i> <i>l</i> <i>q</i> <i>e</i> <i>'</i>	92
<b>w</b> <i>Z</i> <i>iq</i> <i>cui</i> <i>t</i> <i>"</i> <i>Q</i> <i>`</i>	<i>tQ</i> <i>UM</i> <i>t</i> <i>i</i> <i>mi</i> <i>g</i> <i>w</i> <i>R</i> <i>K</i> <i>w</i> <i>K</i>	96
<b>cA</b> <i>g</i> <i>Aa</i> <i>iq</i>	<i>bu</i> <i>Re</i> <i>g</i> <i>nd</i> <i>t</i> <i>Ri</i> <i>R</i> <i>ie</i> <i>t</i> <i>b</i> <i>b</i> <i>u</i> <i>b</i> <i>v</i> <i>c</i> <i>Z</i> <i>K</i> <i>j</i> <i>Z</i> <i>v</i>	
<b>c</b> <i>g</i> <i>cui</i> <i>t</i> <i>"</i> <i>Q</i> <i>`</i>	<i>ij</i> <i>Libi</i> <i>t</i> <i>y</i> <i>t</i> <i>I</i> <i>e</i> <i>v</i> <i>a</i> <i>w</i> <i>e</i> <i>c</i> <i>i</i> <i>E</i>	99
	<i>t</i> <i>g</i> <i>S</i> <i>e</i> <i>v</i> <i>x</i> <i>'</i> <i>i</i> <i>t</i> <i>i</i> <i>v</i> <i>l</i> <i>u</i> <i>b</i> <i>t</i> <i>j</i>	100
<b>w</b> <i>Z</i> <i>iq</i> <i>cui</i> <i>t</i> <i>"</i> <i>Q</i> <i>`</i>	<i>ij</i> <i>Lib</i> <i>t</i> <i>Z</i> <i>i</i> <i>v</i> <i>R</i> <i>b</i> <i>w</i> <i>Z</i> <i>i</i> <i>c</i> <i>K</i> <i>u</i> <i>k</i>	104
	<i>a</i> <i>g</i> <i>q</i> <i>D</i> <i>'</i> <i>v</i> <i>i</i> <i>Z</i> <i>v</i>	106
	<i>B</i> <i>m</i> <i>j</i> <i>v</i> <i>g</i> <i>x</i> <i>t</i> <i>b</i> <i>Z</i> <i>t</i> <i>Z</i> <i>j</i> <i>m</i> <i>t</i> <i>'</i> <i>m</i> <i>s</i> <i>u</i> <i>'</i> <i>Z</i> <i>v</i>	107
<b>I</b> <i>o</i> <i>Aa</i> <i>iq</i>	<i>m</i> <i>w</i> <i>n</i> <i>Z</i> <i>'</i> <i>P</i> <i>P</i> <i>q</i> <i>ie</i> <i>bv</i> <i>'</i> <i>i</i> <i>c</i> <i>w</i> <i>i</i> <i>c</i> <i>w</i> <i>k</i> <i>R</i> <i>Z</i> <i>v</i>	
<b>c</b> <i>g</i> <i>cui</i> <i>t</i> <i>"</i> <i>Q</i> <i>`</i>	<i>m</i> <i>w</i> <i>n</i> <i>Z</i> <i>'</i> <i>P</i> <i>P</i> <i>m</i> <i>n</i> <i>u</i> <i>q</i> <i>K</i> <i>c</i> <i>w</i> <i>i</i> <i>e</i> <i>w</i> <i>i</i> <i>K</i> <i>A</i> <i>v</i> <i>e</i> <i>n</i>	108
	<i>m</i> <i>w</i> <i>n</i> <i>Z</i> <i>'</i> <i>P</i> <i>P</i> <i>q</i> <i>A</i> <i>K</i> <i>w</i> <i>g</i> <i>D</i> <i>r</i> <i>m</i> <i>n</i>	110
<b>w</b> <i>Z</i> <i>iq</i> <i>cui</i> <i>t</i> <i>"</i> <i>Q</i> <i>`</i>	<i>m</i> <i>u</i> <i>g</i> <i>w</i> <i>R</i> <i>K</i> <i>I</i> <i>i</i> <i>v</i> <i>R</i> <i>'</i> <i>b</i> <i>w</i> <i>Z</i> <i>K</i> <i>c</i> <i>w</i> <i>i</i> <i>c</i> <i>w</i> <i>k</i> <i>R</i> <i>Z</i> <i>v</i>	112
	<i>c</i> <i>Z</i> <i>e</i> <i>v</i> <i>'</i> <i>x</i> <i>ie</i> <i>bv</i> <i>'</i>	113
<b>m</b> <i>B</i> <i>g</i> <i>Aa</i> <i>iq</i>	<i>bu</i> <i>Re</i> <i>g</i> <i>nd</i> <i>t</i> <i>Ri</i> <i>e</i> <i>'</i> <i>w</i> <i>'</i> <i>I</i> <i>m</i> <i>w</i> <i>n</i> <i>u</i> <i>Z</i> <i>'</i> <i>K</i> <i>g</i> <i>u</i> <i>b</i> <i>m</i> <i>g</i> <i>j</i> <i>'</i> <i>v</i> <i>q</i> <i>b</i>	
<b>c</b> <i>g</i> <i>cui</i> <i>t</i> <i>"</i> <i>Q</i> <i>`</i>	<i>e</i> <i>'</i> <i>w</i> <i>'</i> <i>g</i> <i>b</i> <i>b</i> <i>k</i> <i>x</i> <i>j</i> <i>Z</i> <i>v</i>	117
	<i>m</i> <i>w</i> <i>n</i> <i>u</i> <i>Z</i> <i>'</i> <i>K</i> <i>w</i> <i>n</i> <i>t</i> <i>m</i> <i>t</i> <i>e</i> <i>A</i> <i>e</i> <i>'</i> <i>v</i>	119
<b>w</b> <i>Z</i> <i>iq</i> <i>cui</i> <i>t</i> <i>"</i> <i>Q</i> <i>`</i>	<i>m</i> <i>w</i> <i>n</i> <i>u</i> <i>Z</i> <i>'</i> <i>K</i> <i>g</i> <i>u</i> <i>b</i> <i>m</i> <i>g</i> <i>j</i> <i>'</i> <i>v</i> <i>q</i> <i>b</i>	120
<b>A</b> <i>o</i> <i>g</i> <i>Aa</i> <i>iq</i>	<i>ie</i> <i>bv</i> <i>'</i> <i>i</i> <i>e</i> <i>'</i> <i>w</i> <i>'</i> <i>I</i> <i>m</i> <i>w</i> <i>n</i> <i>u</i> <i>Z</i> <i>'</i> <i>K</i> <i>g</i> <i>u</i> <i>b</i> <i>m</i> <i>ch</i> <i>t</i> <i>j</i> <i>v</i> <i>P</i> <i>b</i> <i>v</i>	
<b>c</b> <i>g</i> <i>cui</i> <i>t</i> <i>"</i> <i>Q</i> <i>`</i>	<i>e</i> <i>'</i> <i>w</i> <i>'</i> <i>g</i> <i>u</i> <i>b</i> <i>'</i> <i>w</i> <i>n</i> <i>t</i> <i>m</i> <i>t</i> <i>e</i> <i>ie</i> <i>bv</i> <i>'</i> <i>V</i> <i>k</i> <i>Z</i>	124
	<i>g</i> <i>y</i> <i>j</i> <i>g</i> <i>u</i> <i>b</i> <i>t</i> <i>'</i> <i>i</i> <i>m</i> <i>'</i> <i>s</i> <i>'</i> <i>t</i> <i>'</i> <i>K</i> <i>'</i> <i>f</i> <i>j</i> <i>avi</i> <i>Y</i> <i>v</i>	127
	<i>ie</i> <i>bv</i> <i>'</i> <i>i</i> <i>ag</i> <i>'</i>	129
<b>w</b> <i>Z</i> <i>iq</i> <i>cui</i> <i>t</i> <i>"</i> <i>Q</i> <i>`</i>	<i>m</i> <i>w</i> <i>n</i> <i>u</i> <i>Z</i> <i>'</i> <i>K</i> <i>g</i> <i>u</i> <i>b</i> <i>m</i> <i>g</i> <i>j</i> <i>'</i> <i>v</i> <i>q</i> <i>b</i>	130
	<i>ie</i> <i>bv</i> <i>'</i> <i>i</i> <i>M</i> <i>'</i> <i>'</i> <i>i</i> <i>f</i> <i>v</i> <i>l</i> <i>v</i>	131
	<i>c</i> <i>I</i> <i>m</i> <i>w</i> <i>n</i> <i>Z</i> <i>'</i>	134
<b>be</b> <i>g</i> <i>Aa</i> <i>iq</i>	<i>Z</i> <i>j</i> <i>b</i> <i>v</i> <i>g</i> <i>j</i> <i>-</i> <i>K</i> <i>ch</i> <i>t</i> <i>j</i> <i>v</i> <i>P</i> <i>b</i> <i>v</i>	137
<b>c</b> <i>g</i> <i>cui</i> <i>t</i> <i>"</i> <i>Q</i> <i>`</i>	<i>Z</i> <i>j</i> <i>b</i> <i>v</i> <i>i</i> <i>Avi</i> <i>I</i> <i>K</i> <i>w</i> <i>Z</i> <i>c</i> <i>q</i> <i>w</i> <i>K</i>	148
<b>D</b> <i>c</i> <i>m</i> <i>s</i> <i>n</i> <i>v</i> <i>i</i>		150
<b>M</b> <i>'</i> <i>s</i> <i>c</i> <i>u</i> <i>A</i>		152

## Dc`icbv

fvi Zixq Dcgnv`tk mvinZ` cŭg tbtvej weRqx Kue I mvinZ`K iex`bv\_ ViKz| Ab`w`tk  
ugkixq Kue bvirRe gundR ntjb Avie mvinZ` AvtiK tbtvej weRqx hMvŠKvix tj LK|  
wZub Avie mvinZ` cŭg I GKgvT tbtvej cy`vi jvf Ktib| `RtbiB tQvUMr itqtQ  
wekyj Ae`vb| hw` I L`wZgvb G `B mvinZ`K wfbæcwitek I ms`wZtZ teŭo DtvTOb,  
GZrmEj| Zvt`i tQvUMr AtbK ugj itqtQ|

mgvR I cwi cvtkP bivr w`K Zvt`i wj Lubi ga` w`tq PgrKvi fiŭe dZU DtvTQ| Avgiv hw`  
eŭgwiK iex`bv`tk t`wL, Zte t`Le Zui mŭokxj KtgP ga` w`tq cvtki KvtQ GtKK  
mgq GtKK ifc aiv w`tqtOb wZub| KLtbr gtb ntqtQ wZub GKRB mv`R tQvUMr Kvi,  
KLtbr Zvi Dcb`vm Ztk wPibqtQ evsj mvinZ`i GK e`wZµgx Jcb`vmK wntmte| Avevi  
hLb Zui bvUK, tjv cov nq, gtb nq wZub GKRB mv`R bvu`Kvi | cŭq AvovB nvrvti i gZv  
Mvb wj tLtb wZub| evsj vt`k, fvi Z I kŭj sKvi gZv t`tk Zui Mvb RvZixq msMtzZi ghPv  
tctqtQ|

Ab`w`tk bvirRe gundRi tQvUMr itqtQ wekyj Ae`vb| Avie mvinZ` tQvUMr Zvi nvtZ  
bZb ifc jvf KtitQ| Avie Dcb`vm mvinZ`i mv`R `bvI wZub| Zui nvtZ Avie Dcb`vm  
tctqtQ bZb gvT| cvŭvZ` mvinZ`i gZv wZub Zui mvinZ` ifc-im-Mŭ wej tŭq cvVKtK  
GZUB gy KtiwTjb th, Avie mvinZ`i BwZvntm wZub GK bZb Aa`vq iPbv Kti GK  
wekyj D`PZvq tctQ t`b| ARB Ktib Avie mvinZ` cŭg tbtvej weRqx tLZve| iay  
tQvUMr bq, Dcb`vm bq, Zui GKvnaK Dcb`vm Aeja`b wbugZ ntqtQ Pj wPŭ| wZub eŭ  
wntbgvi cvŭj w`c wj tLtb| wgtii gZv GKw iŭYkxj t`tk wZub th wej mvinmKZvi  
cwiPq w`tqtOb Zv Kg mvinZ`KB tctitQb|

Gŭ DftqB wfbæhMi I wfbæfvIvi ntj I Zt`i wj Lubi kw<sup>3</sup> I Avcb mŭoktgP gva`tg hM  
weL`vZ mvinZ`K wntmte meRb wew`Z| mŭo m`tiB Zt`i tkŭtZji cŭvY| mvinZ` tbtvej  
cy`vi ARB ZviB `xKwZ|

GB Mtel YvKtg`cŭ\_exi `B gnv`tki `B weL`vZ mvinZ`K m`utK`cvVKtK mŭuó avi Yv  
cŭvb I Zvt`i m`utK`bivr ARvbr Z` AeinZ Kivi cŭvntm mePZK cŭPón Kiv ntqtQ|  
GtZ cvVK AbgŭvYZ ntq wR`^mRbkw<sup>3</sup> KvtR jwMtg Avcb tgav I gbbkxj Zvi cŭqvM  
NwUtg mvinZ` mŭotZ cŭvmx nte| Avkv Kiv hvq, GB Mtel YvKg`mvinZ`w`cŭ cvVK I  
Mtel Kt`i Rb` GKw gj`evb cŭvY wntmte Kvr Kite|

cŏg Aa'vq

**bmRe gndzRi Ræbx**

cŏg cwi t'Q`

Rb# I evj "Kvj

bmRe gndzR 1911 mvtj i 11 wltmst wgtii ivRaibx Kvqti vi Rvgvuj qvq GKwU ga'neE gvgvj g cwi evti RbMhY Ktib| cwb fvB I `B tevbi gta" wZibB meRwbô| Zui tR"ô cÂg mtnv` i fvB gvgst, tckvq wZib GKRB Avig©Avdmvi | Zui KwbôZg AMR Beving, bmrtei tPtq cŏg 15 eQtii eo| tQvUtej vq bmrRe Lg GKwkZ; teva KiZb| mtnv` it` i mvt\_ eqtmi GB Amg cv\_R" cvi`úwi K myútkP tytÎ wQZv ntj I e"Z"q NuUqtQ, hv wZib Zui wj Lubz DtzL KtitQb| Zui fvBtqiv cŏZ`KB PvKwi Ræx, msMZ KvitY mevB e"Í wQj K"mvi qvi wbtq| tevbt` i wetq ntq hvI qvq Zvivi` vqxi Nti Ptj hvq| bmrRe evj "Kvtj GKwkZji GB` wgn Rætb KLtbv Avcb fvBtevbti mvt\_ tLjvayv KitZ cvitZb bv, tkv\_vl teovtZI thtZb bv, GgbwK wbtRi gtbi K\_v I `tL-e"v, tjtK Zvt` i mvt\_ fvMvfM chSÍ KitZ cvitiwb| G KvitY tQvUtej vq cŏZtekv wkit` i mvt\_ wZib Lg eÜZ; KitZ PvBzB| Zui wczvi bvg Ave`y AvRR Beving Avng` civk| tckvq wZib GKRB miKwi PvKzi| cti PvKwi tQto e"emvtK tckv wntmte MhY Ktib| wZib thgb avngR wQtj b tZgb wQtj b ms" wZgbv| gv dmvZgv` wkvZ ntj I cŏPxb w`k#bi cŏZ Zvi AvMh wQj LgB cëj | wZib bmrReK wgtii Rv`yi, wciwvW, cŏPxb w`k#bi Kvj Privj` vb, tjt v Nvj tq Nvj tq t` LvZb|

mšftbi bvtgi mvt\_ Avie i wZ Abvqx wczvi bvg hy Kiv nq| wKš' bmrRe gndzRi tytÎ Gi e" wZug ntqtQ| Zui bvtgi mvt\_ th gndzR kãw thvM Kiv ntqtQ Zv Zui everi bvg bq, cl"vZ KcUK wdrwqvq cŏdmi bmrRe civk gndzRi bvgvbniti Zui bvg ivLv nq bmrRe gndzR| gndzRi Rtb#i mgq Zui gv Zxe<sup>a</sup> cñete`bv tfvM Ktib| cti GB wPwKrm#ki cŏPóvq Zvi Kó jvNe nq| G KvitY Zui gv GB Ww<sup>3</sup>vti i bvtg wBR cŏt i bvg ivtLb bmrRe gndzR|<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Gnmv b hgvBi, hvTx QvDibi wbtP (Absv), ( cKvkKvj 2009, XivKv, tivt` jv cKvkbx|), c., 9



Zte wZwb bwwRe gwndR Ave`jy AvwRR Aj -mwej wR brtgI cwiwPZ wQtb| Zwi  
brtgi tkfI GB Aj -mwej wR kãU Krfvte hÿ ntjv mwsew`Kf`i Ggb GK cãkã  
Rerfe wZwb etj b, GwU cwmi emi Kfvte f`qv nqwb| GB kãU Zwi brtgi mvt\_ Rjõ  
w`tqiwQtb Zwi eÜzW. Av`g iRe| wZwb etj b, Avgvi `v`v wgti i cjiZb cã\_wgK  
w`vj tq cwi`kR wntmte PwKwi KifZb| H w`vj tq thZ mwej wR brtg GKwU iv`v  
wQj | GB MfUv hLb Awg Avgvi eÜz`i ejjvg, Gici t`fK Av`g iRe AvgvK  
ej Z mwej wRi cÿ GtmQ| GfvteB brtgi mvt\_ hÿ ntq tMj mwej wR kãU|<sup>1</sup>  
tQvUtejv t`fKB m`Qj Zvi gta` teto DfVb wZwb| Kov agRq Abjvmb wQj `kkte Zwi  
cwmi emi K HwZn`| hvi cãvY Zwi %kktei wj Lubi gvS jÿ Kiv hvq| `qs bwwRe  
gwndR GK mwÿvKvfi Zwi %kktei `ZPviY wZwb GfvteB KfifQb, ØYou would  
never have thought an artist would emerge from that family.<sup>2</sup> (Avwib KLfbv  
fvetZI cvi`teb bv th, GKRB wki x Krfvte GiKg GKUv cwmi emi t`fK tewi tq AvmZ  
cvi)

---

<sup>1</sup> www.enotes.com

<sup>2</sup> wikipedia.org/wiki/Naguib-Mahfouz



ৱ`তq মৱনZ`tK তেতQ ৱতqতQb ৱZৱb L৭ Kó tctj b| KviY `k#bi týtÎ ৱZৱb bৱRetK GK D`xqgvb cÂZfv ৱntmte f1el`evYx KtiৱQতj b| ৱekte`'vj q Z`vMi cÂvk eQi cti 1988 মতj ৱZৱb hLb tbttej cy`vi tctj b ZLb Zui ৱkÿK Burtasharad ZtK GKৱU Aৱfb>`b evZPcৱMতqৱQতj b| bৱRe Zui cÂZ GB t`a I fvtj vevmv t`tL Avôh`ntqৱQতj b|

ৱZৱb ৱekte`'vj q Z`vM KtiৱQতj b cÂq cÂvk eQi AvtM, GZ `xN`mgq cti I ৱZৱb Kxfvte ZvtK `šiY ivLtj b! Gi GKgvÎ KviY, BstiwR I diৱm fvlvi Ici Zui Amæ`Lj ৱQj etj B ৱZৱb mKtj i bRti cto ৱMতqৱQতj b|

ৱekte`'vj tqi AtbK ৱkÿtKi মত\_ Zui e`w³MZ cwiPq ৱQj, G i KGB GKRB kvqL gybdv Avāy iv¾vK| ৱZৱb Mfxi Ávb, D`vi gvৱeKZv, evj ô e`w³tZi AৱKvix Avjv`v cKৱZi GKRB gvby| bৱRtei Rxetb Dtj LthvM` Ae`vb itqtQ kvqL gybdv Avāy iv¾vKti| bৱRtei KíRMtZ ৱZৱb me mgq AbtçÜYv`vqx ৱntmte f1gKv titLtQb, GB cU\_extZ Zui gtZv e`w³ L৭ KGB AvtQ|

ৱekte`'vj q Rxetb bৱRe মৱntZ`i tPtq `k#tK tenk , iæj; ৱ`tj I tQvUMí tK KLtব AeÁvi tPtL t`tLbৱb| `k#bi cÂZ Zui Mfxi AvKI` \_vKvq mi Kwi f1te `jvi ৱkc AR#bi m#hvM %Zwi nq| G KviY ৱZৱb Avi I tenk Kti diৱm fvlv Aa`qtb Drmrvx nb|

1934 মতj dqv` ৱekte`'vj q ntZ `k#b `ৱZKZj; jvtfi ci ৱZৱb `jvi ৱkc Gi Rb` Avte`b KtiৱQতj b, ৱKŠ`'fM`µtg Zui Avte`b evwZj ntq hvq| `Übs KigৱU ZtK GKRB ৱLóqv b KcU tftে f1zৱ KtiৱQj | Zvij Kv t`tK Zui bvgৱU ev` ৱ`tq GKRB ৱgkixq ৱLôvbtK tmLvtb Ašf` Kiv nq|

`ৱZK ৱৱMÖAR#bi ci `k#bi cÂZ Zui th ৱetkl AvKI` `Zwi ntqৱQj Zv µtgB ৱb ntZ \_vtK| Zvl dxK Avj n1Kxg (Rb# 1898 ৱLôvā), Bqvngv ৱn`x, tZvqvnv trvftmb (gZ: 1973 ৱLôvā) I gungy ZvBgj i<sup>1</sup> Mtí i Pwi Î , tj v ZtK GZUv AvKó. KtiৱQj th, ৱZৱb `k#bi ZwiEK RMr tQto মৱntZ`i KíRMtZ cœk KtZ eva` nb|<sup>2</sup> gva`ngK t`tK i iæ Kti ৱekte`'vj tq QvÎRxeTB `k# I gtbৱeÁvtbi Ici Zui Pij kৱUi I tenk cœÜ ৱewfbamsev`cÎ I g`vMৱRtb cKৱkZ nq|

<sup>1</sup> gungy ZvBgj (1884- 1974), ৱgkixq Avie M`'tj LK|  
<sup>2</sup> Gnmv b hgvBi, hvTx QvDibi ৱtP (Abgv`), ( cKৱkKvj 2009, XvKv, titv`j v cKৱkbx/), c., 11

Bmj vtgi tmš`h`eva ubtq 1936 mvtj kvqL gybdv Ave` Avj i vhtKi ZËyevtb  
 @Mafhum al-Jamal fi al-Falasafa al-Islamiya@ ukktivbtg `yeQtii GB MtelYvKg©  
 cwi Pvj bv Kivi Rb" MtelYv mnvqK wewfbæDcKiY msM@ni ci GK eQi MtelYvKg©  
 Pvj tq MtelYvi QKevav Rxeb Z"iM Kti `raxbfvte mwinZ" mvabri gvbtm mwinZ"PPvq  
 cji v`tg gtbvbtæk Ktib| `vzK wvMöj vtfi ci Avi-wimvj v cwi Kvq mvsewv`K  
 wntmte KgRxeb iia Ktib| G mgq Zui tckv`vi mwinZ"K nevi cwi KíbvI wQj |  
 wKš` tj Lvjt wLi DcvR@ w`tq msmvi Pvj vtbv Kivb ntq cto, ZvB 1939 mvtj miKwi  
 PvKwi tZ thvM`vb Ktib|

## ZZxq cwi t"Q`

### **mwntZ" nvtZLuo**

gvÎ 11 eQi eqtm wZwb wj LtZ iia Ktib| wZwb cPz eB cotZb| KwMK Avie mwntZ" I weUK tMtq`v Dcb`vm,tjv Zui Lg cQt`i wQj | wZwb wQtj b Gi GKwbô cvVK| G mwntZ"Kg©Zui wki gvbtm e`vcK cFve we`ri Kti | wWtUKwUF mwvi R,tjv wZwb Lg Avbt`i mvt\_ cotZb| mwntZ"RMtZ cOetki AbYUK wntmte gva`igK `fi Gtm cWZ KwMK Avie mwntZ" I cvOvZ" mwntZ"i weWfbæfvlv t`tK cvl qv Abg`v mwntZ" ZtK tek Abg`vYZ Kti tQ|

gva`igK covtkivr Ae`vq KwMK Avie mwntZ"i cOZ Zui Mfxi AvMh `Zui nq| wZwb KwMK avivi Avie KveZv iPbvi gva`tg mwntZ"PPH mPbv Ktib| cieZtZ GB Qt`ve× ÷vBj Z`vM Kti M` KveZv tjLv iia Ktib| G avivi cOZR wntmte mdj Zvl ARB KtiwQtj b| G mgq wZwb Avil Aa`qb Ktib Avj -Rvnt`hi ÔAvj evqvb AvZ-wZeCbô I Beb Ave` Avj iwe`Yin Gi ÔAvj -BK` Avj -dwni `ô bvgK cyK `ôU|

G mgq wZwb nwidR bvirtei wj Lubi I ,Ygy cvVK wQtj b| wbtRi tjLv tLi tcQtb metPtq tek fvgKv nwidR bvirtei wQj etj wZwb DjtL Kti tQb| nwidR bvirte wQtj b GKRb tPvi, `vMx Avmvgx Ges evBkUw wWtUKwUF Dcb`v`mi tjLK| `k eQi eqtm nwidR bvirtei ÔRbmbm mivbô ctob| Gi dtj wbtRi Rxeb e`tj thtZ iia Kti |<sup>1</sup>

gva`igK Aa`qbi Z Ae`vq `emPÎ`cY`elq wbtq `k`bi I ci wZwb tek KtqKwU cOÛ I GKwU `jP tQvUMi iPbv Ktib| cO`igK we`vj tq covtkivr Ae`vtZB wZwb weWfbæ tjLtki tQvUMi cto G,tjvtZ wR AvtZvcjwä I bZb Z` msugk`Yi mgstq Ab`iKg Kti tjLvi tPóv Kitzb| wZwb KLb tjLv iia Ktib mivew`tki Ggb cOkie Revte wZwb etj b, I started writing while i was a little boy, may be it's because I was reading a lot of books I admired, and thought that I would like to write something like that someday. Also, my love for good writing pushed me.'<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> www.enotes.com

<sup>2</sup> The ARAMCO WORLD MAGAZINE March-april 1989

Avig hLb tj Lv i i æ Kwi ZLb Avig Ly tQvU| Avi mæZ G Kvi tY th, Avig G  
tQvU eqtm GZ AnaK eB ctoWQj vg hv cto Avig gy ntqWQj vg Avi gtb gtb  
fveZvg AvgrtKI GKw`b GiKg ij LtZ nte| Avi GUvB fitjv tj Lvi cÅZ  
Avgrvi GKUv tcÅYv mWó Kti tQ|

WZvb Kxfite tj tLb Gi eYDvq The New York Journal of Commerce Gi mivewi`K  
Larry Luxner -tK t`qv GK mivyrKvfi bwiRe gvndR etj b, ūi wake up early in  
the morning and walk for an hour. If i have something to write, I prefer to write  
in the morning until midday.<sup>1</sup> (Avig Ly mKvtj Ngy t`tK DfV GK NÈv nWZvg; hLb  
AvgrtK tKvfbwKQzvj LtZ ntZv Avig tfvfi tj LuUvB teik cQ` KiZvg| Avi `gy chSf  
ij tL thZvg|)

Zte PvKwi Rxeftb mvinZ`PPf Rb` mgqUtK Ab`fite fVM Kti wbtqtQb| mvinZ`i  
cÅZ A`g` `úpvn kZ e`ZvqI ZtK `wgta ivLtZ cvfiwb| WZvb GKvafii  
wbiweWQbftvte 70 eQi mvinZ` iPbv Kti tQb|

Zte PvKzi `vKvKij xb mvi w`b Avdm tkfI bwiRe mvinZ`KtgP Rb` mgq w`tZb| Avi  
GfiteB WZvb vekhmvinZ`i tmvbwij cvZvg mÂq Kti tQb wbtRi vekvj mvinZ`KgP  
mvinZ`i cÅZ WZvb KZUv wbtew`Z cÅY I mivmX wQtb G t`tK mntrB Abgyv Kiv  
hvq| `` c`vii m wi wfdtK t`qv 1992 mtj kvfj W Avj -kvi ewfi tbqv GK mivyrKvfi  
bwiRe gvndR etj b, AvUv t`tK `tUv chSf Avig Kvtr `vK, Pvi Uv t`tK mivZUv chSf  
ij wL, Zvici mivZUv t`tK `kUv chSf Avig cwo|<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> The ARAMCO WORLD MAGAZINE March-april 1989

<sup>2</sup> kvfj W Avj -kvi ewfi, `` c`vii m wi wfd, 1992 mtj |

PZz°cwi t`Q`

cwi c° tj LK intmte AvZycKvk

17 eQi eqtm cwi Kva Zui cŭg cĕÜ Qvcv nq ō` Wvics Ae I i vej dm A`vŪ ``  
ev\_°Ae ubD vej dmŌ| G mgtq vZub MŌRtqktbi Rb` wks dzv` vekte`vj tq fivZ°  
nb| `ubK msev`cĪ, wevfbaevgviqKxtZ tQvUMr I cĕÜ cKvtki ga` w`tq Zui  
mvinZ`KgPj tZ\_vtK|

bvire gindR GKw Af`šlxy ōtō fMŌQtb| vZub fivel`r KgfyĪ intmte mvinZ`,  
bv`kŌtK tetQ ubteb- G`ŌZ vPšl ZvtK GK RvUj cwi w`vzi mvgtb`w Kvi tqvQj|  
tkl chšl mvinZ`tK MŌY Kijtj b| Zte vZub`kŌ veltql AtbK tj Lvjtj vL Ktib|  
`kŌtK ,iaZjt`evi h\_v\_°KviY vQj| `kŌ`úo I ev`em°Z GKw velq, Ab`v`tK  
mvinZ` ej tZ ešvq nvm`-tKšZK I vPĒvetbv`bgj-K mŷóKgP GLvtb fvebv I Kí bvi  
velq, hv ev`é m°Z bq| gvby th tKej mgvtRi AvKvi-cKwZ. e`jvq Zv bq, tm  
GKw Rxešl mgvR`Zwi Kti| vZub eštZ cvi tjb, Zui t`tki gvby mvinZ`i tPtq  
ivRbmvzi cŭZB tevk AvKŏ| wki I mvinZ` intmte Mti i K`i Zvt`i KvŏQ tZgb  
vQj bv, tKD tKD G aitbi mvinZ` mŷó MteP velq gtb bv Kti j 3/4vi velq gtb  
Ki Z| bvire gindR`Kvi Ktiŏb, cŭg w`tK hLb Zui wKŏtQvUMr الرسالة وا

رواية (Al-Risala wa Al-Riway) mŷvqKcĪ cKvKZ ntjv vZub tj LK intmte Gi  
`Zj`ve Kiv t`tK veiZ iBtjb| KviY vZub Zui eŪt`i ve`šcvZK mgvtj vPbvi  
wKvi ntZ Pvbvb|

hLb Zui`kŌ veltq tj Lv cĕÜ,tjv cKvtki Rb` vbePZ ntZv| wK H mgq Zui  
cŭg w`tKi AtbK tQvUMr Qvcvi AthvM` etj vdwitq t`qv ntqtŌ| vZub ev`éZv  
eštZ mŷg ntqvQtb th, wgtii mvariY RbMY Mti i tPtq`kŏbi ,iaZcy°  
cĕÜ,tjv coŏZ Avak`r°Q`teva Kti| G KviŏY Avgiv t`LtZ cvB, bvire wgtii  
ve`gvb cwi w`vz tUi tctq mvinZ`i MvZavivtKl tmB w`tK cĕvvnZ Ktiŏb| vZub  
wgtii Avg RbZvi gvbmKZv eštZ tcti ivRbmvzi gŏZv GKw Avtj vPZ I Pj gvB  
Bm`tK mvinZ`i Dcv`vb intmte tetQ vbtjb| vZub mvinZ` mŷi fite ivRbmvzi  
cŭqvM Kijtj b| ivR%wZK tcŌYvtK vbtq Gtjb mvinZ`i gŏa`| Gfite`kŏbi  
RbvcŏZvtK e`tj w`tjb mvinZ` w`tq| GfiteB mvinZ`-ivRbmvZ Zui tj Lvjtj vLi

GKIU , iæZçY©Ably½ ntq `wofjv| weL'vZ Avie mvinuZ"K Zpv tnvmvBb, ZI dxK Avj -nvKxg I Aveÿm gvingy Avj -Av°v` Gi iij Lubi f³ uQtb uZub| Avie mvinuZ" Z\_v ugxixq mvinuZ"i Mib tciw tq nek'mvinuZ" Zt i `vb uQj AþbK DtaY©

ZvBtZv tvttej cy`vii Rb" hLb Zui bvg tNvIYv Kiv ntjv ZLb ZvrjwYK cÜZuµqv e³ Kti uZub etjb, Avie mvinuZ" G cy`vi cÜBi Rb" Avgvi tPtqI teik nK`vi ugxiti weL'vZ mvinuZ"K tZvqnv tnvtmb, ZvI dxK Avj -nvKxg, Aveÿm gvingy Avj -Av°v`¹| hv`I bvirRe gvndR mæutK©mgvtj vPKt`i e³e" uQj AvI AŞZ 25 eQi AvtM ZtK tvttej cy`vii fvtZ Kiv DvPZ uQj | hv uZub tctjb 25 eQi cti | Aveÿm gvingy Avj -Av°v` GK tUij wfk b mvyvrKviti Zui tvttej cy`vi cvevi nek eQi cteetj uQtb, bvirRe gvndR mvinuZ" tvttej cy`vi cvevi thvM`| mvinuZ"K Avj -Rvnh², Kue gZvbeÿr³ I Avej Avj v Avj -gvAvixi⁴ iPbv ZtK `viæfvte AvKó.KiZ| uZub %mq` gybdv j ydx Avj -gvdivj Zxi tivgvuUK Mt i I Abj³ uQtb| 1928 mtj uBR`^kiv K`enkto" bvirRe gvndRi ntZ tQvUMti i hviv`iænq| 1988 mtj tvttej cy`vi cvevi AvM chSÍ Zui 14u Mí MŠ' cKvKZ nq| cEtÜi tPtq Mí iPbvq uZub AvAK `rQ>``teva Kijt I cWÍ Kv mæuv`Kt`i cEtÜ cKvtk teik AvMh`\_vKvq 1930 mtj i w`tK uZub gtbvthvM t`b cEtÜ iPbvq| mvinuZ"i KibôZg kvLv intmte G mgq tQvUMti i cvVKucQZv uQj AvKvk tQvq| wefbaecÍ cWÍ Kvq 1944 mvj chSÍ Zui 70uI i AvAK tQvUMí Qvcv nq| cÜg w`tK uZub AvKvU Mí cKvK Kti tQb tKvbtv weibgg QvovB|

1930 mvj t`tK uZub Zpv tnvmvBb, ZI dxK Avj nvKxg, Aveÿm gvingy Avj -Av°v`, gZvbeÿr tnvmvBb nvqKvj, Beñxg Ave` Avj Kiv i Avj gvthbx, Bqvnbqv nv°x, gvingy ZvBgj GB mvinuZ"Kg©Mfxi fvte Aa`qb Kitz`iæ Ktib| tZvqnv tnvmvBb Gi AvZRxetxgj-K Dcb`vm mvinuZ" Avj AvBq`vgÜ Øviv uZub Mfxi fvte cFweZ nb| bvirRe gvndR w`tRB etj tQb, Avgvi Rxtbi Mí Uv mrvtbtv ntqtQ tZvqnv tnvtmibi Rxtbi AbKiftY| Avj nvKxg Gi عودة الروح ò I ØYawmiyyat Na`ib fil Aryaf ò

<sup>1</sup> Gnmv b hgyBi, hvix QvDibi w`tP (Abgr`), (cKvKvj 2009, Xiv, tiv`jv), c., 24

<sup>2</sup> Avj Rvnh-Aveÿmx hMi Avie Kue (gZy 868 uLbã)|

<sup>3</sup> gZvbeÿr-Aveÿmx hMi Avie Kue (gZy 965 uLbã)|

<sup>4</sup> Avej Avj v Avj gvAvix-Aveÿmx hMi Avie Kue (gZy 1057 uLbã)|



eB `y Zui gbRMtZ GK A tgvPbxq Qvc GtK w` tqwQj | Bsti wR fvlvq wZub `y<sup>9</sup> wQtb, ZvB G fvlvq cvi` wkZv AR#bi Rb` 1932 mvtj wZub James Blake<sup>1</sup> Gi Ancient Egypt Avie tZ Abey` Kti mij gv gnyi cPovq مصر القديمة (cPxb wki) bvtg cKvk Ktib| 1938 mvtj Zui cQg Mí Mš' أونهمس الجنون (cVMtj i cQvc) cKvkZ nq| G Mš' `vb cvq 28w Mí | hv cVKmgtR wcyfvte mgv` Z nq| hMtkō G mvinZ`Ki weij mvinZ` cZfvi cKvk NtU G Mí ,tjvi Kwinub wbgP, `ePÍ`gq `kír K iPbr%kj x Avi AvaybK fvlv cQvtM wbcy `yZvi Kvi tY| mvinZ` iPvri gva`g wntmte wZub Avie fvlvK tetQ tbb| cti Zui mvinZ`Kg<sup>9</sup> Bsti wR, diwim I RvgPb fvlvq Abw-Z nq| 1936 mvtj misew` K wntmte Avj -wimij v cwi Kvq thvM`v tbi gva`tg misew` KZv mvinZ` (أدب الصحافة) i iæ nq| G mgq wZub Avj -wvj vj I qv Avj Avni vq (الهلال والأهرام) cwi Kvq tQvUMí wj LtZb|

### wekfmntZ` gtbwtek

Avie mvinZ`i L`wZgub tjLKt`i mvinZ`Kg<sup>9</sup>Aa`qb tk tI wZub 1936 mvtj gtbvthvMx nb wekfmntZ` Aa`qtb| thSetb Zui Aa`qb c wZub wbgggwdK wQj bv| AvyUrmcEi Kvi tY wR AvZvK cwi ZB.Ki tZ G mgq Acwi Kír Zfite Aa`qb Ki tZb| `wZK wMj v t fi ci wZub GK `y wbePtki b`vq Aa`qtb i w l qe` wbePtb Lg mZK wQtb| cvōvZ` mvinZ`i t kō Mš, tj v GKwīZ Kti wZub Aa`qtb i Rb` tetQ wbtj b wek^ mvinZ`i BvZvnm| weL`vZ Bsvj k bvU`Kvi, mgvtj vPK I RiebPwi ZKvi Rb wMšK I qvUvi Gi mvinZ`Kg<sup>9</sup>Aa`qtb i Rb` wntj Kkb Ki t j b| eB wbePtb Zui GKvš tKv t b v ci v gk<sup>9</sup>vZv wQj bv| e`w<sup>3</sup>MZ cPovq ZvtK G `yfn KvRwU m`ubæKi tZ n tZv| Rb wMšK I qvUvi Gi mvinZ`Kg<sup>9</sup>Aa`qb tk tI wZub eStZ cvi t j b wekfmntZ`i w l qe` GK I Awfbq RvMZ msKxYZv I t fšMij K mvgv tcvitq wekfmntZ` cZubwaZ; Kti wekōv t e i | wZub wekfmntZ`i gta` Mfxi fite Aa`qb Ki tZ j vM t j b Shakespeare, Dickens<sup>2</sup>, Wells, Galsworthy, Shaw<sup>3</sup>, Joyce I D.

---

<sup>1</sup> James Carlos Blake (born May 26, 1947) is an American writer of novels, novellas, short stories and essays.  
<sup>2</sup> Charles John Huffam Dickens (1812 – 1870) was an English writer and social critic.  
<sup>3</sup> George Bernard Shaw (1856 – 1950), known at his insistence simply as Bernard Shaw, was an Irish playwright, critic, and polemicist.

H. Lawrence ( 1885 – 1930) *Gi mō mvinZ“Kg<sup>Ⓞ</sup>tj v|<sup>1</sup> iak mvinZ“Kt`i gta” wZib*  
*Aa“qtbi Rb” tetQ wbtj b* Gorki<sup>2</sup>, Tolstoy ( 1828 – 1910) Dostoyevsky (1821 – 1881) *I*  
Chekhov ( 1860–1904) *†K| Rvg<sup>Ⓢ</sup> tj LKt`i gta” LtR wbtj b* Goethe (1749 – 1832)  
Mann (1875 –1955) *I* Kafka *Gi iPbv| Awgwi Kvb tj LKt`i gta”* Melville,  
Hemingway, Faulkner, Dos Paso's *I* O'Neill<sup>3</sup> *Gi mvinZ“Kg<sup>Ⓢ</sup> wZib cāvZ*  
*Bsti wR I divim mvinZ” t\_†K Avie fvlvq Abw-Z mvinZ” ,tjv teik teik Aa“qb*  
*Ki†Zb| hwi I bwiRe gvnd<sup>Ⓢ</sup> cīvZ” mvinZ”i A†bK tj LtKi mvinZ” Aa“qb*  
*Kti†Qb etj A†bK weL`vZ tj LtKi bvg D†L Kti†Qb, Zte wZib G-I etj†Qb,*  
*Kvi I mvinZ“Kg<sup>Ⓞ</sup>c†j vcyj wZib Aa“qb Ktibw| GgbwK wZib Uj ÷q Gi mvinZ“Kg<sup>Ⓞ</sup>*  
*c†j vcyj Aa“qb Ktibw|*  
*wKŠ wZib hLb Rb I qvUvi wKŠ Gi wj Lub wmtj Kkb Kti wQ†j b ZLb wj I Uj ÷q Gi*  
*ŌWar and Peace<sup>Ⓢ</sup> eBwU c†o†Qb| cīvōgv tj LKt`i gta” tk. wqci Zvū Kv†Q GKvšl*  
*eÜž g†Zv| Zwi ü`q`úk<sup>Ⓢ</sup> fvebv, mvinZ“tevam=úbæig”iPbv bwiRe gvnd†Ri g†b*  
*GZUVB`vb Kti wbtq†Qj wZib ej†Z eva” n†q†Qb, Awig tk. wqci†K Avgv†`i t`tki*  
*mšlb etj g†b Ki Zvg, GgbwK G K\_v KL†bv fve†Z cvi Zvg bv th, tm Avgv†`i tKD*  
*bq| tk. wq†ti c†i wZib teik cQ` Ki†Zb Ibsen<sup>4</sup> Ges Stringberg<sup>5</sup> †K| Zte*  
*wZib Chekhov Gi wbtōō I KwšKi bwi†Kcbvq L<sup>Ⓢ</sup> GKUv AvMh†eva Ki†Zb bv|*  
Joseph Conrad<sup>6</sup> *Gi Heart of Darkness Z†K Am†efi†e gy Kti wQj | Rieb†eva*  
*wbtq Joseph Conrad Gi D`vi I we`kY<sup>Ⓞ</sup> w†fwi i we”QžY bwiRe gvnd†Ri tj LK*  
*m†vq c†ZfvZ n†q†Qj , Gi c†ve bwiR†ei Dcb`im ,tj v†ZI c†o†Q|*  
Proust<sup>7</sup> Ges Kafka<sup>8</sup> *Gi wj Lub Zwi ü`q†K Q†q thZ| Zte wZib Joyce<sup>9</sup> †K*  
*G†Ker†i Ab`iKg AZ†bvq c†Zfvi AwKvix wntm†e t`†L†Qb| mvinZ”i fve Avi*  
*Z†ybyj Üvbx M†el Yvagr<sup>Ⓢ</sup> wbg<sup>Ⓢ</sup> %k j xi Kvi†Y Zwi mRbKg<sup>Ⓢ</sup> hb wbt i U m†Z”i evnK| Zwi*

---

<sup>1</sup> Avnmib wbtq` , bwiRe gvnd†Ri †Q†UM† , (c†KvKij -2001, XvKv, A`wB<sup>Ⓢ</sup>, c., 15  
<sup>2</sup> Maxim (Maksim) Gorky ( 16 March 1868 – 18 June 1936) was a Russian and Soviet writer.  
<sup>3</sup> Eugene Gladstone O'Neill (1888 –1953) was an American playwright .  
<sup>4</sup> Henrik Johan Ibsen (1828 – 1906) was a major 19th-century Norwegian playwright, theatre director, and poet.  
<sup>5</sup> Johan August Strindberg (1849 – 1912) was a Swedish playwright, novelist, poet, essayist and painter.  
<sup>6</sup> Joseph Conrad (1857 – 1924) was a Polish-British writer.  
<sup>7</sup> Valentin Louis Georges Eugene Marcel Proust ( 1871–1922), better known as Marcel Proust, was a French novelist, critic, and essayist .  
<sup>8</sup> Franz Kafka (1883 – 1924) was a German-language writer of novels and short stories.  
<sup>9</sup> James Augustine Aloysius Joyce (1882 – 1941) was an Irish novelist and poet.

Ulysses Dcb`vm m`úK`bmiRe gvnd`Ri e<sup>3</sup>e` n`jv GUV A<sup>TMZ</sup> iKtgi GKU  
 Dcb`vm nI qv m`ÉjI cVtKi gvS c`ej tSuk %Zwi KiZ myg n`qUj | fv`jvevmv  
 Anb` `` myi t`Sij K w`K, t`jv GLvB Z`j aiv n`q`Q | t`Lv`bv n`q`Q fv`jvevmv  
 AR`bi GKvšI w`B`^ ÷vBj | w`Zw Melville<sup>1</sup> Gi Moby Dick Gi D`QimZ c`ksmv  
 Kt`iQb | iayZvB bq, Moby Dick tK w`t`k` t`k` Dcb`vm etj Zui g`šé` |  
 Hemingway<sup>2</sup> I Dos Paso's tK w`Zw `y` t`jLK etj Rv`bZb | Zte Z`i t`jLv  
 Melville Gi ch`q t`S`Q`Z c`t`iwb | Ac`q`vRbxq RvUj Zvi Av`k` w`bZb etj B  
 Faulkner<sup>3</sup> Gi t`jLv w`Zw L`y GKUv cQ` ` KiZb bv |

### **W`Lubi t`y`T` K`j`K`K`j**

bmiRe gvnd`R w`Q`j b h`\_ó `úóev`x I m`vnm | w`Zw AKc`U `Kvi Kt`iQb th,  
 Dcwi D<sup>3</sup> c`v`vZ` m`v`wZ`K I Z`i i m`v`wZ`K g`v`v`v w`Zw c`f`v`eZ n`q`Uj b |  
 Zui Dcb`v`m w`Zw w`v`P` K`j`K`K`j I Av`šR`v`ZK gvbm`ú`b`e monologue e`envi  
 Kt`iQb | `f`v`eK Avi ev`éZvi Av`š`K` c`v`eZ`bi av`v`q m`v`wZ` w`b`g`v`Y w`Zw h`\_ó  
 cv`i`gZvi c`v`P`q w`t`q`Qb | ev`éZv Zui m`R`b`m`v`wZ`i Abb` `e`i`k`ó` | mg`v`RK  
 t`c`y`v`c`U`K w`K`Q`Av`t`j v`P`bv Avi ch`q`j v`P`bv ci w`Zw m`v`w`K`Zvi m`v`\_`t`m`U`v`K m`v`wZ`  
 i`f`c`v`Y KiZb | Virginia Woolf e`Z`w`š`K` K`j`v`K`j`Zvi Rb` AZ`šI mg`v`t`j w`P`Z  
 n`q`Q | Avi GB e`Z`w`š`K`Zv BD`i`v`c`q m`v`wZ`i Av`e`"Q` `` Ask | ZvB w`Zw d`v`Y`i  
 m`v`wZ`K`i` g`t`a` t`e`Q` w`b`t`q`U`j`b Flaubert<sup>4</sup>, Anatole France (1844– 1924), Emile  
 Zola (1840 – 1902), Stendhal, Proust, Mauriac<sup>5</sup>, Sartre ( 1905 – 1980) m`n`w`L`v`Z` me  
 t`j`L`K`i` | G`m`K`j` m`v`wZ`K` I t`j`L`K`i` t`j`L`b`x` Zui m`v`wZ` GK`b`Z`b` gv`T`v` th`v`M` K`i  
 Z`i`K` Av`i`e`w`t`k`^GK` e`w`Z`µ`g`x` m`R`b`k`w`<sup>3</sup> i Av`a`K`v`x` m`v`nm`x` t`j`L`K`i` gh`v`q` mg`v`m`x`b  
 Kt`iQ | h`L`b` e`v`v`x` av`i`Y`v` Av`i`e`w`t`k`^Z`\_v` w`g`k`i`x`q` m`v`wZ` G`t`K`e`t`i`B` AR`v`v` w`K` G`g`b  
 GKU mg`t`q` bmiRe gvnd`R Av`i`e` m`v`wZ` Gi e`envi Kt`j`b | m`Z`i`v`S` GUV ejv hvq

<sup>1</sup> Herman Melville ( 1819 –1891) was an American novelist, short story writer, and poet of the American Renaissance period.

<sup>2</sup> Ernest Miller Hemingway (1899 – 1961) was an American novelist, short story writer, and journalist.

<sup>3</sup> William Cuthbert Faulkner ( 1897 – 1962) was an American writer.

<sup>4</sup> Gustave Flaubert ( 1821 – 1880) was an influential French novelist.

<sup>5</sup> Marie-Henri Beyle ( 1783 – 1842) better known by his pen name Stendhal Francois Charles Mauriac ( 1885 – 1970)

hMvcthvMx mvmx wetePbv bwiRe gvndRtK Avie mvinZ" GK I GKgvI e"iZµgx  
e"iZj; cwi YZ Kti tQ/

gvI 7 eQi eqtm 1919 mtj wZib wgtii th faven wectei exfrmiyc Aetj vKb  
Ktib/ G wecæ Zui e"iZgvbtm RvZiqZvev`x tPZbvi DtbW NUvq, cieZKvtj G  
AvfÁZv mvinZ"i DcKiY wntmte Zui wkí -mvinZ" AZ"šÍPgrKvi fite dZU DtvTQ/  
1939 mtj 21 eQi eqtm cKvKZ nq Zui cŪg Dcb"vm اعبث الأقدار (AveQž  
AvK; vi) | اادوييس (iv`oxm) | اكفاح طيبة (wKdvub ZvBiqevZb) bvgK  
HvZvnmK Dcb"vm `w cKvKZ nq h\_vµtg 1943 I 1944 mtj | cici G wZbiU  
Dcb"vm cKvKZ nI qvq cY`D`"tg mvinZ" iPbvq gtbwtek Ktib/ bwiRe gvndRi  
Agi KxvZ"Zui Dcb"vm/ Avie mvinZ" wZibB GKgvI tj LK hui 33w Dcb"vm  
cKvKZ ntqtQ/ Avi tKvtbv mvinZ"tKi GZ Avak msL`K Dcb"vm cKvKZ nqub/  
iPbvq hMvcthvMx wZ"bZb wclq wbtq GtKi ci GK Dcb"vm iPbv KiZ \_vtKb/  
Zui AvZwbô wbi j m mvinZ"mvabv AvZ Aí mgtg Gtb t`q cPž L"vZ/

RbwcQZvi t`iZ AvmZ \_vtK/ Zui Kij Rqx wj Lwb Qw hvq mevi ü`q/ 1946 t`tK  
1952 mtj i gta" wZib tj tLb Kvqtiv wj wRi wZbiU Dcb"vm- palace walk, palace  
of Desire, sugar Street/ Kvqtiv knii wewfbæiv`li bvtg Dcb"vm wZbiU bvgKiY  
Kiv nq/ Kvqtiv kniiB GKRb Avj mivB` Avngv` Ave` Avj -RvI qvj, Zvi Rieb,  
cwi evi, Avi wZb cRtbfi Kwinub wck` AvKvti Dc`vcb Kiv ntqtQ Dcb"vm, tj vtZ/  
Kwinubi w`li tmB cŪg wckhy t`tK iia Kti cAvtki `ktKi wgti chšI/ GB  
Kvqtiv knii ifc-im-MÜ tgl eo ntqtQb bwiRe gvndR, dtj Gi tfZtii wbhfm  
mjbcyfite Dtv GtmTQ Zui `` Kvqtiv wj wRtZ/ G Amvgvb" mvinZ"KtgP Rb" AtbK  
mgvtj vPKB ZtK Pvj wWtKY, ej RvK, Uj ÷q, `tqfw`i chiq wetePbv KiZ  
iia Kti/ GK `kK cvi KtiI GB Dcb"vm, tjv cKvtki Rb" tKvtbv cKvK LjR  
tcjt b bv/ G NUbvq wZwi Lg ggfmZ ntj b/

**tbtej cy`vi I Zpv ûmBtbi gšé"**

GB Agi K\_wkix cŪZôv jvtfi ci MZ kZtKi IvUi `ktK AveviI tQvUMtí i  
RMtZ wdti Avtmb/ cvVKtK Dcnvi t`b wfbægpwKQztQvUMí | Pj wPtí i cvDij wcl/  
Zui tkô mvinZ"Kg`Iqx Dcb"vm (Kvqtiv wj wRi wZbiU Lð) iPbv tkI ntj wZib Gi

mgvtj vPbvi Rb" Aviie mvinZ"i w Kcij tZvqrvn tnvtm̄bi kiYvcbaenb| wZub G  
 Dcb"vm cvV Kti Kij Rqx Dcb"vm̄Ki Avief̄: Aviie mvinZ"i mgnvb e"i<sup>3</sup>Z;  
 wktivbtg cksmvgj-K GKUW `N°gšé" Avj -Avnig cwiKvq cKvk Ktib| 1988  
 mvtj tZvqrvn tnvtm̄bi G K\_vtK mZ" cōvY Kti GB Dcb"vtmi Rb" wZub tbtēj  
 cy"vi tctj b| tZvqrvn tnvtm̄b Îqx Dcb"vm̄K wZbuW LtĐ nef<sup>3</sup> Kivi cimgk<sup>9</sup>`b|  
 cieZx<sup>9</sup>Z 1956 mvtj <sup>0</sup>بين القصيرين (evBbvj KyQivBb), 1957 mvtj  
<sup>0</sup>قصر الشوق (Kymiæi kvl K) | <sup>0</sup>السكرية (Avm-mÿvvi q"vn) btg wZbuW  
 LtĐ G Îqx Dcb"vm cKvkZ nq|  
 Zui Avakvsk mvinZ"ielqK iPbv eB AvKvti cKvtki cteB Avj -Avnig cwiKvq  
 avivevnnKfvte cKvkZ nZ| 1971 mvj t\_tK gZi wQw b AvM chš wZub Avj -  
 Avnig cwiKvq ōctqU Ae wFDŌ btg GKUW mvBvnnK Kj vg wj LtZb| hv Aviie Ges  
 Bsti wR `tUv fvlvtZB cKvkZ ntZv|  
 2001 mvtj cwiKvq tj Lv G Kjvg, tjv wbtq GKUW eB tei nq| hv t`tk-wet`tk  
 mgvb RbucōZv j vf Kti | bwiRe gindR Aviie mvinZ" Z\_v vekmvinZ" RMtZi AZ"šl  
 DpZgvtci GKRb tj LK nl qv mĒj 1988 mvtj mvinZ" tbtēj cy"vi jvf Kivi  
 ce<sup>9</sup>chš vekmvinZ" `ievti Zui cKvk NtUwQj hrmvgvb" |



t̄-ṁ-fv̄tj veivmq Av̄ZevnZ nqub Zui ˆkke| ZvB̄Zv fZˆt̄ i Kov Abj̄vm̄tb̄ KivŪtZ  
 n̄t̄q̄Qj t̄Q̄t̄j̄t̄ejv| iex`bv\_mn Abˆ me ũki-eȳt̄Ki ũb̄ KivUZ t̄Rvovm̄t̄Kvi  
 VvK̄zevmoi evB̄ti t̄v̄Zjvq ˆnȳY-ceˆt̄Kv̄t̄Yi NiŪt̄Z| G evmoi Aš̄tc̄j̄ I evB̄tii  
 gnj, evmoi evB̄tii RMr ũb̄l × ũQj ũki-eȳt̄K̄t̄ i Rbˆ| iayZv-B bq, VvK̄zevmoi  
 ũkīt̄ i ˆK̄t̄kvi-DĒxYˆeqm chŚ̄l P̄vKīt̄ i k̄m̄tb̄B R̄xebh̄vc̄b Kīt̄Z n̄t̄Zv| ũki-  
 eȳt̄K̄t̄ i c̄Ź VvK̄zevmoi Av̄ffveK̄t̄ i Dˆv̄m̄xb̄Zvi m̄j̄h̄v̄M ũb̄t̄q fZˆiv Kó j̄v̄N̄tei  
 Rbˆ ˆm̄q̄Z̄;̄c̄j̄t̄bi t̄ȳt̄Ī ũkīt̄ i b̄v̄b̄viKg ũb̄t̄lav̄Av̄ I K̄t̄V̄vi k̄m̄tb̄ Av̄Ūt̄K̄ i v̄LZ|  
 G m̄á̄t̄K̄ˆi ex`bv\_ Zui ŐR̄xebˆŹZ̄ eBŪt̄Z D̄t̄j̄L̄ K̄t̄īQ̄b, k̄vg ũQj VvK̄z̄ evmoi  
 M̄n̄Kḡf̄ k̄vg ũkī īm̄t̄K̄ GK̄Ū N̄tii ḡt̄aˆ X̄K̄v̄t̄Zb, Gici N̄tii P̄v̄vi ũt̄K̄ PK ũt̄q  
 ˆM̄ t̄Ūt̄b̄ ḡȳ M̄ˆt̄i K̄t̄i ej̄t̄Zb, M̄īDi evB̄ti t̄M̄t̄j̄ f̄x̄l̄Ȳ ũecˆ| ũec̄t̄ i K\_v̄ īt̄b̄ īm̄e  
 GB M̄īDi ḡt̄aˆ P̄z̄ K̄t̄i ēt̄m̄ v̄K̄t̄Zb| f̄q t̄L̄v̄t̄b̄vi Rbˆ i v̄ḡv̄q̄t̄Yi m̄x̄Z̄v̄nīt̄Yi  
 D̄c̄v̄L̄v̄b Ges i ˆ3̄ ũcc̄v̄m̄ȳV̄v̄K̄v̄Z̄t̄ i f̄x̄w̄Z̄c̄Ō M̄ī ,t̄j̄ v̄ ej̄t̄Zv|  
 i ex`bv̄t̄\_i R̄xebˆŹZ̄ t̄t̄K̄ Av̄i I R̄iv̄b̄v̄ h̄v̄q, GK GK mgq t̄Q̄v̄t̄Ūt̄ i kv̄š̄l̄ Kīt̄Z  
 fZˆiv Z̄v̄t̄ i ḡv̄\_v̄ c̄v̄b̄x̄q R̄t̄j̄ i ēt̄ov̄ ēt̄ov̄ c̄v̄t̄Ī i ḡt̄aˆ P̄r̄et̄q̄ i v̄LZ| Ggb̄w̄K̄ t̄Q̄t̄j̄ t̄ i  
 k̄v̄v̄l̄i Rbˆ P̄v̄K̄iv BŪ n̄v̄t̄Z̄ K̄t̄i ˆm̄t̄q̄ v̄K̄Z| īm̄ei f̄v̄l̄v̄q G ũQj ŐfZˆivRKZŠ̄Ź|  
 VvK̄zevmoi fZˆt̄ i i ex`bv\_ D̄t̄j̄L̄ K̄t̄īQ̄b Av̄ḡv̄t̄ i ũkīK̄v̄t̄j̄i k̄v̄m̄b̄K̄Z̄P̄ ēt̄j̄|  
 i ex`bv̄t̄\_i f̄v̄B̄t̄ev̄t̄b̄iv Z̄t̄K̄ Av̄ i K̄t̄i īm̄e ēt̄j̄ W̄v̄K̄t̄Zb| D̄3̄4̄j̄ ēt̄ȲP̄ ũkīt̄ i m̄ev̄B̄  
 GKUz̄t̄ev̄k̄B̄ c̄Q̄ˆ K̄t̄i| GŪv̄ ḡv̄b̄t̄j̄ i ˆf̄veR̄v̄Z ˆev̄k̄ó| i ex`bv\_ Zui Abˆv̄bˆ  
 m̄t̄n̄v̄ īt̄ i Z̄j̄b̄v̄q AZŪv̄ D̄3̄4̄j̄ t̄P̄n̄v̄iv̄i Av̄aK̄v̄ix̄ ũQ̄t̄j̄ b̄ b̄v| Zui eo ũ ũ t̄m̄šˆ ũḡb̄x̄  
 t̄ex̄ Z̄t̄K̄ D̄t̄Īkˆ K̄t̄i c̄Źq̄B̄ ej̄t̄Zb, Av̄ḡv̄i īm̄e k̄vg ēt̄ȲP̄ n̄t̄Z̄ c̄v̄t̄i, ũK̄šˆ Áv̄b-  
 M̄v̄i ḡv̄i D̄3̄4̄j̄ Z̄v̄q̄ t̄m̄ Abˆ m̄ev̄B̄t̄K̄ Q̄v̄v̄t̄q̄ h̄v̄t̄e|  
 ũkīḡb̄ m̄em̄ḡq̄ evB̄tii RMr I c̄ŹK̄ūZ̄i m̄v̄v̄b̄aˆ j̄v̄f̄ K̄iv̄i Av̄k̄v̄q̄ DˆM̄ē n̄t̄q̄ v̄K̄t̄Zv|  
 t̄Q̄v̄t̄ej̄v̄ t̄t̄KB̄ c̄ŹK̄ūZ̄t̄c̄Ź̄ K̄v̄ei ḡt̄b̄ ēv̄m̄v̄ t̄et̄av̄Q̄j̄| %k̄k̄t̄e ũZ̄v̄b̄ t̄Rvovm̄t̄K̄vi  
 ev̄m̄ōt̄Z̄, t̄ev̄j̄ c̄j̄ I c̄v̄m̄b̄n̄v̄Ūi ev̄M̄v̄b̄ev̄m̄oi c̄ŹK̄ūZ̄K̄ c̄v̄īt̄et̄k̄ N̄t̄j̄ t̄ev̄ōt̄Z̄ AZˆv̄v̄aK̄  
 ˆr̄Q̄ˆ ˆt̄evā Kīt̄Zb| ũK̄šˆ GK̄ḡv̄Ī ˆt̄j̄ h̄v̄l̄ q̄v̄ Q̄v̄ov̄ Abˆ mgq̄ ev̄j̄ K̄ i ex`bv̄t̄\_i ev̄m̄oi  
 ev̄B̄ti t̄et̄iv̄t̄b̄v̄ ũb̄l × ũQj | 1873 m̄v̄t̄j̄ īm̄ei eqm̄ h̄L̄b̄ GM̄v̄t̄iv̄ ēQi Z̄L̄b̄ Zui  
 D̄c̄b̄q̄b̄ Ab̄v̄Z̄ n̄q|  
 Gici ũZ̄v̄b̄ t̄k̄ãḡt̄Ȳ K̄t̄q̄K̄ ḡv̄t̄m̄i Rbˆ ũc̄Z̄v̄i m̄v̄t̄\_ t̄ei n̄b| c̄Źt̄ḡ Zui v̄ ˆR̄b̄  
 k̄v̄š̄l̄b̄t̄K̄Z̄b, Gici ũK̄Q̄K̄v̄j̄ c̄v̄Áv̄t̄ei AḡZ̄m̄t̄i K̄v̄Ūt̄q̄ ũk̄L̄t̄ i D̄c̄v̄m̄b̄v̄c̄×ũZ̄ c̄v̄i ˆk̄Ź

I nigw`i mvin̄tei ubKU Ae`vb Kti ucZv-cŷ `Rtb GKIU uKL ,iaŋti cŋ\_ŋv  
Ktib| GLvb t\_ŋK t`te`bv\_ cŷŋK ubtq Wj tñšim `kj kn̄ti i ubKU eŋmUvq Pŋj  
hvb| Wj tñšimŋZ 2300 ugUvi ev 7500 dŋ D`PZvq eŋmUvq cıvıoPœvi GKIU  
evstj vŋZ Zıv Ae`vb Ktib| Avb` âgŋY ucZvi mŋ\_ `gvm KvuUŋq Avevi Kj KvZvq  
udti hvb iex`bv\_ |

## **Abvoaf Rxebhvcb**

GZ eo Rıg`vi cıvıevŋi RbMŋY Kti I Zui RxebhvcbcxıZ uQj ubZvšB mnRmij  
I Abvoaf | evj `Kıj nŋZB uZıv uej vıvZv cŋ\_` KiŋZb bv| Rxeŋbi mevıKŋB uQj  
ıbqgk;Lj vi MıŋŋZ Avex| KıcoŋPıcoı uQj Lŋ Kg| ZuiB tj Lv Rxeb`ŋZ t\_ŋK  
Rıvı hvq, tbqıgZ bıŋgi GK `ıR`emıoi mevı RıgıKıco `Zıvı KiŋZv| tbqıgZ  
iex`bv\_ı Rıgıq tKıŋbv cŋKU bv ıvLv Abvek`K gŋb Kiŋj I ZıŋZ uZıv tKıŋbv  
cŋKı `yLŋeva KiŋZb bv| Avı I Rıvı hvq th, `k eŋı eqŋmi AvŋM uZıv KLŋbv  
ŋgıRı cŋıbıv| Avı kxZKıŋj Mıg Kıcoı bv| GKIU mı`v Rıgıv I cı Avŋı KıU mı`v  
Rıgıv cŋı kxŋZı mgqıv KvuUŋq ı`ŋZb| GgbıK kxZ t\_ŋK ıy`v tŋŋZ Dj uKsev ckgx  
Kıco chŋı cıŋZb bv| `kkŋei `ŋZPıvı Yıq iex`ŋeŋb ıvıyZ VıKŋemıoi tm mgŋı  
ıvıve eB t\_ŋK Rıvı hvq- iex`bv\_ı RŋZv, ŋgıRı I RıgıvKıcoı msL`v I LıP  
GŋKevŋı Kg uQj bv| ŋRxeb`ŋZŋı cŋ\_g Lmıvq hıv I `vıv`-KxZŋı Gme uPŋıı  
tj k gıvı tbB| Avıvŋ`ı avı Yı, VıKŋemıoi Aŋŋŋı AvcbRŋı tŋŋcŋıZ-ŋı Rıvı  
t\_ŋK ıbevıvZ Zıe` AbŋıvZkxj evj ŋKı Avŋı K tıvıf Zui gŋb eĀvı Ggb `ıM  
tKıUŋŋ th, ev`e cŋıv, tıvŋKı Zui Kıŋŋ Lŋ Zŋŋ etj gŋb nŋŋŋŋ|  
cıeZŋZ Aek` iex`bv\_ mı`vıvŋı, mnRmij I Abvoaf Rxebhvcŋb AvıMŋı uQŋı b|  
ŋRxeb`ŋZŋı cŋıvıvŋı iŋcıvŋı abıvı cŷ ev Rıg`vi Ggb Avıfıvı uecıvŋZ GKIU  
gReŋ Ae`vb `Zıvı Kıvı Rb` mŋPZbıvıeB ıvıvıvıvı uQŋı b| ŋCkŋŋ ev ŋeŋRkŋŋ  
bvıgK fŋZ`ı mıveR ZĒıevıvıvı ıkı Kıj nŋZB Kıe `ıvıvıvıvı nŋZ evı` nŋŋıQŋı b| Ckŋ  
Zui Lıevŋıı fıM mıvŋı ıbŋRı Rb` tıŋL ı`Z| Rj Lıevŋıı ıelŋı Ckŋ hŋ\_ŋ Kıvıŋ`  
KıŋZv|



# «Zxq cwi t”Q`

## Aa`qb

ie»`bv`\_i ik`yvi`nq `v`v tntg>`bv`\_i (1844-1915) nvtZ| Zte cwi emi K  
 cwi tetk Ck`P>`a`ne`v`m`M`ti i`eY`e`wi Pq`e BwU w`tq ie»`bv`\_i covtkv`v i`ia`nq|  
 ōi`ne`R`xeb`xi`ō t`j`LK`c`k`v`š`K`g`vi`c`v`j`w`j`t`L`t`Q`b-`C`k`P`>`a`ne`v`m`M`i i`w`P`Z`e`Y`e`wi`P`q`e  
 eB`ti`c`l`g`f`v`M`ie»`bv`\_i`c`l`g`c`o`v`i`e`B`w`nt`m`te`a`ti`t`b`q`v`h`v`q`Z`te`V`v`K`z`e`m`o`i  
 w`m`v`t`e`i`L`v`Z`v`q`ie»`bv`\_i`R`b`e`B`w`U`t`K`v`i`K`\_`v`t`K`v`\_`v`l`D`t`j`t`b`B`|`w`Z`w`b`A`v`i`l`  
 R`w`b`t`q`f`Q`b`th`m`e`Z`w`Z`w`b`w`Z`b`e`Q`i`A`v`U`g`v`m`e`q`t`m`g`b`t`g`v`n`b`Z`K`Ń`y`v`i`c`Ń`x`Z`ō`n`k`i`  
 ik`y`v`ō`e`B`w`U`c`v`V`e`B`w`nt`m`te`c`t`o`t`Q`b`|

Ōi`e»`K`\_`v`ō`e`B`ti`t`j`L`K`L`t`M`b`b`v`\_`P`t`A`v`c`v`a`v`q`w`j`t`L`t`Q`b`ie»`bv`\_`V`v`K`z`i`i`ik`y`v`A`v`i`nq`  
 nq`M`p`u`k`y`K`g`v`a`e`P`>`a`g`t`L`v`c`v`a`v`t`q`i`nvtZ|`w`Z`w`b`w`Q`t`j`b`e`a`Ń`v`b`t`R`j`v`i`e`v`m`>`v`|`Z`te`  
 t`m`m`g`q`ie»`bv`\_i`e`q`m`K`Z`w`Q`j`R`v`b`v`h`v`q`v`b`|`t`R`v`o`v`m`t`K`v`e`v`m`o`i`V`v`K`z`v`j`v`t`b`e`m`Z`  
 c`v`K`v`j`v`|`G`B`c`v`K`v`j`v`q`e`v`m`o`i`i`k`i`t`i`m`v`t`\_`c`v`o`v`-`c`l`Z`t`e`k`x`i`t`Q`t`j`i`v`l`c`o`v`t`k`v`b`v`  
 K`i`t`Z`A`v`m`Z`|`c`i`e`Z`Ń`Z`G`B`V`v`K`z`v`j`v`t`b`i`\_`i`a`g`n`v`k`t`q`i`c`v`K`v`j`v`G`e`s`c`v`D`Z`g`k`v`B`  
 ō`g`v`a`e`t`M`u`v`B`ō`G`i`t`L`v`t`g`t`j`ie»`bv`\_`G`i`ō`t`Q`t`j`t`e`j`v`ō`l`ō`n`k`i`ō`e`B`ti`c`t`j`i`v`t`b`v`e`U`  
 K`w`e`Z`v`q`|`ō`K`i`L`j`ō`ō`R`j`c`t`o`c`v`Z`v`b`t`o`ō`t`m`m`g`q`e`Y`e`e`wi`P`q`e`B`ti`G`B`c`l`g`f`v`M`  
 c`o`v`i`m`g`q`c`l`g`K`v`e`v`b`v`f`w`Z`i`A`v`b`>`j`v`f`K`t`i`b`w`Z`w`b`|

Z`u`i`v`v`t`m`v`t`g`>`bv`\_i` (1859-1922) e`q`m`h`L`b`c`w`P`e`Q`i`P`v`i`g`v`m`f`v`M`t`b`q`(w`w`  
 t`m`š`w`g`b`x`i`t`Q`t`j`)`m`Z`c`h`v`M`t`z`v`c`v`a`v`t`q`i` (1859-1933) e`q`m`Z`L`b`c`w`P`e`Q`i`w`Z`b`  
 g`v`m`t`m`m`g`q`ie»`bv`\_i`e`q`m`w`Q`j`w`Z`b`e`Q`i`A`v`U`g`v`m`|`w`Z`b`R`b`\_`v`K`t`Z`b`G`K`B`N`t`i`  
 c`o`t`Z`b`l`G`K`B`Ń`Ń`j`|`Z`Ń`i`c`o`v`t`Z`b`M`p`u`k`y`K`g`v`a`e`P`>`a`g`t`L`v`c`v`a`v`q`|`G`K`B`c`w`i`e`v`t`i`  
 G`K`B`c`w`i`t`e`k`t`e`t`o`D`t`v`t`Q`b`G`B`w`Z`b`w`U`i`k`i`|`Ń`Ń`j`h`v`e`v`i`R`b`G`K`w`b`e`o`t`i`  
 t`L`v`t`w`L`i`k`i`ie»`bv`\_`K`v`b`v`R`t`j`o`t`b`|`h`Z`U`v`b`v`Ń`Ń`j`h`v`e`v`i`A`v`K`v`y`v`q`Z`v`i`t`P`t`q`t`e`w`k`  
 e`v`m`o`i`e`v`B`t`i`h`v`e`v`i`B`v`Q`v`q`|`G`m`e`u`t`K`Ń`R`x`e`b`Ń`Ń`Z`Ń`Z`ie»`bv`\_`w`b`t`R`B`w`j`t`L`t`Q`b`-`ō`B`n`v`i`  
 c`t`e`Ń`t`K`v`t`b`w`b`M`v`m`o`t`Z`P`w`o`b`v`B`e`v`m`o`i`e`v`m`i`l`n`B`b`v`B`Z`v`B`m`Z`h`L`b`B`Ń`Ń`j`c`t`\_`i`  
 a`g`Y`e`Ń`v`š`i`U`t`K`A`w`Z`k`t`q`v`<sup>3</sup>`A`j`s`K`i`t`i`c`l`Z`n`B`A`Z`Ń`Ń`j`K`w`i`q`v`Z`w`j`t`Z`j`v`M`j`Z`L`b`N`t`i`  
 A`v`i`g`b`w`K`Q`z`B`w`U`w`K`t`Z`P`v`w`j`b`v`|`w`h`w`b`A`v`g`v`i`i`k`y`K`w`Q`t`j`b`w`Z`w`b`A`v`g`v`i`t`g`v`n`w`e`b`v`k`  
 K`w`i`e`v`i`R`b`c`Ń`j`P`t`c`U`v`N`v`Z`m`n`G`B`m`v`i`M`F`Ń`K`\_`w`U`e`w`j`q`v`w`Q`t`j`b`ō`G`L`b`B`Ń`Ń`j`h`v`e`v`i`

Rb` thgb Kwi tZQ, bv hrevi Rb` Brvi tPtq AtbK tenk Kwi tZ nBte|<sup>1</sup> Zui  
 MpiKÿK gvaep>`a gLvcva`vtqi G K\_v fivel`evYxi gtZv mZ` ntqij | iex`bv\_  
 VvKz` vbtRI Zv gtb KtitQb| ZvBtZv wZvb wj tLtb-ôGZeťov Ae`\_©fivel`evYx  
 Rxeťb Avi tKvťbwi` b KYMpi nq bvB|<sup>2</sup>

**MZvbMvZK vkyve`e`vi cĹZ Abnv**

w`vj tqi aiverav vkyve`e`v ZvK AvKó. KitZ cvti vb| w`vj q thtZ wQj Zui tNvi  
 AvciĚ| ZvB etj vkyvi Avtj v t\_tK`ti mti\_vtKvb|`vkvÿZ gvby wQj b iwe|  
 tgvťUI wZvb`ž-Ktj tR thtZ PvBtZb bv|`ž-Ktj tR thtZ PvBtZb bv etj B VvKz`  
 ewoi mevB thgb wPvšZ wQj b, tZgub fxlYfite wPvšZ wQj b Kwei eiev gnw<sup>3</sup>  
 t`te>bv\_ VvKz` I gv mvi`v t`ex| ZvK GKvťwngK vkyvq vkvÿZ Kivi cĹPóvq  
 tKvťbv iKg KgwZ wQj bv Zvť`i |

`kkte iex`bv\_ Kj KvZvi I wťqUvj tmgbwi`ž hLb fivZ`nb ZLb Zui eqm wQj  
 wZb eQi`k gym gvĹ| GLvťb wZvb cťotQb ōikiťevaKŌ eB| Rxeb`šZŌi ōvkyvi`  
 Aa`vtq wZvb wj tLtb- ōtmLvťb Kx vkyv jvf KtiwQj vg gtb tbB, wKš` GKUv  
 kvmbcĹvj xi K\_v gtb AvťQ| cov ewj tZ bv cvwťj tQj tK tetĀ`w KivBqv Zrvvi  
 `B cĹvvi Z nvťZi I ci Kvťmi AtbK, wj tkw GKĹ Kwi qv PvcvBqv t`l qv nBZ|  
 Giťc aviYvkw<sup>3</sup>i Af`vm ewni nBtZ Ašti mĀvvi Z nBtZ cvti wKbv Zrvv  
 gb`Ěje`v tMi Avťj vP`| Ggub Kwi qv wZvš`vki eqtmB Avgvi cov Avi`cnBj |<sup>3</sup>  
 1865 mťj i bťf`gtm K`vj KvUv tUlbs GKvťwngi Mebťg>U cvkvij vq cĹg tkŹtZ  
 fivZ`nb iex`bv\_| GvUťK iex`bv\_ ev Ab`iv bgť`ž etj DťjL Kitj I Avmťj  
 Mebťg>U cvkvij v I bgť`ž wQj`w`ž`Zš; cĹZōvb| Zte GKB ewotZ GKB  
 KZĚťyi ZĚjeavťb cvwPvuj Z ntZv cĹZōvb`w| ZLb Zui eqm wQj mťto Pvi eQi |  
 QvĹRxeťb`ž e`j Zui Af`vťm cvwYZ ntj I wZvb GB cvkvij vťZB meťPtq tenk  
 mgq cťotQb| wKš` GB`ž i evsjv cixvq wZvb hLb evsjv weltq mtePp b`ť  
 tťj b, ZLb Kvťmi vkyK cŹcvťZi AvfťhvM Avťj b| wZxqevťi gtZv ZvK

<sup>1</sup> iex`bv\_ VvKz`, Rxeb`šZ (cĹvkvij -1421, Kj KvZv, nekťvi Zx MšbwefvM), c., 12  
<sup>2</sup> cĹ, B, c., 12  
<sup>3</sup> cĹ, B, c., 12-13

ৱেওঐবি ৱক্কবি ন্ত্ৰ ন্ত্ৰব| Avevi I ত্ৰমB GKB ৱেলত্ৰ Zৱত্ৰK cixyiq emtZ n্ত্ৰব  
 cixyK I mৱmিঐUঐUঐUi ZĒyearf| Geri I ৱZৱ AvtMi Ae-ৱb aঐi ivLtj b| ঐ  
 ত্ৰLvcovi ৱেলত্ৰ iex<sup>১</sup> ৱki gt b Avb<sup>১</sup> ৱQj bv| ৱkyv\_ঐevUe cW ৱbcx ৱZi Afve,  
 kwi-htj-K f ৱZc0 ৱkyve<sup>১</sup> ৱmn bvbv Kvi tY ৱে<sup>১</sup> ৱj tq QvĒve-ৱq nxb n্ত্ৰ ৱKtZ  
 n্ত্ৰZv| ৱkyvmj f AvPiY cwi cšK KzmZ fvlvq QvĒt<sup>১</sup> i ৱkyKiv Mvj g<sup>১</sup> Ki Z|  
 AৱKusk tQj i B AvPri-AvPiY, e<sup>১</sup> ৱnvi ৱQj Ai ৱP I AcgvbRbK|  
 ৱkytKi t<sup>১</sup> qv ৱে<sup>১</sup> ৱUKz ৱk tL ৱb tZ ৱki iv GKUzt<sup>১</sup> ৱi Ki tj I Zv<sup>১</sup> i fveLvbv AvqĒ  
 Ki tZ ৱki t<sup>১</sup> i t hgb ৱej ৱ<sup>১</sup> nq bv, tZg ৱb GRb<sup>১</sup> Zv<sup>১</sup> i tKv t b<sup>১</sup> tL-I tctZ nq bv|  
 ZLbKvi cW ৱbcx ৱZtZ thmKj A ৱbqg, A%ah, A ৱePvi I cȳcvZ<sup>১</sup> ৱ AvPiY ৱQj  
 Ab<sup>১</sup> ৱb<sup>১</sup> ৱkyv\_ঐ<sup>১</sup> i tPtq i ex<sup>১</sup> ৱv\_ A ৱZ mntRB Zv AvqĒ Kti ৱb t q ৱQj b| G m<sup>১</sup> utK<sup>১</sup>  
 ৱqs K ৱe, i aB etj b, 0Avgt<sup>১</sup> i evi ৱ<sup>১</sup> vi GK ৱU ৱetkl tKv tY A ৱng GK ৱU K ৱm  
 L ৱj q ৱQj v g| ti ৱj s, t j v ৱQj Avgvi QvĒ | GKUv K ৱW nvtZ K ৱi qv tPšK j Bqv Zvnt<sup>১</sup> i  
 mvg t b e ৱmqv gv ÷ ৱi K ৱi Zvg| ti ৱj s, t j vi gta<sup>১</sup> tK fvtj v tQj Ges tK g<sup>১</sup> tQj  
 Zvnt G tKevti ৱ<sup>১</sup> i Kiv ৱQj | Ggb-ৱK fvtj v gvbly ti ৱj s I ৱ<sup>১</sup> ti ৱj s, e ৱxgvb ti ৱj s I  
 tevKv ti ৱj t 0i g ৱk 0i c 0 f<sup>১</sup> A ৱng thb mȳu 0 t<sup>১</sup> ৱL tZ cvBZvg| ৱ<sup>১</sup> ti ৱj s, t j vi I ci  
 μgvMZ Avgvi j ৱW c ৱoqv c ৱoqv Zvnt<sup>১</sup> i Gg ৱb ৱ<sup>১</sup> Rv N ৱUq ৱQj t h, c 0 Y ৱ ৱK t j  
 Zvnt i v c 0 Y ৱemR 0 K ৱi qvB k ৱi š j v f K ৱi tZ c ৱi Z | j ৱW i tPv tU hZB Zvnt<sup>১</sup> i ৱeK ৱZ  
 N ৱUZ ZZB Zvnt<sup>১</sup> i I ci i ৱM tKej B e ৱoqv D ৱWZ; Kx K ৱi t j Zvnt<sup>১</sup> i th h t\_ 0 k ৱi  
 nB tZ c ৱi, Zvnt thb f ৱe qv K j v B tZ c ৱi Zvg bv| Avgvi t ৱB b ৱi e K ৱm ৱU i I ci Kx  
 fqsKi gv ÷ ৱi th K ৱi q ৱQ, Zvnt i m ৱy ৱr ৱ<sup>১</sup> evi Rb<sup>১</sup> AvR tKnB eZ 0 vb bv B | 0<sup>১</sup>  
 ZvB ৱZ ৱb GB ঐ i QvĒve-ৱq P ৱKi t<sup>১</sup> i ৱb t q t<sup>১</sup> vZj vq iv<sup>১</sup> ৱi ৱ tK GK R ৱbvj vi avti  
 etm etm mgq K ৱU t q ৱ tZ b | tQj t<sup>১</sup> i m ৱt\_ ৱgk tZ c ৱi tZ b bv| GK Rb ৱkyK K ৱt m  
 QvĒt<sup>১</sup> i m ৱt\_ Ggb t b ৱs iv e<sup>১</sup> ৱnvi Ki tZ b th, Zvi c 0 Z Ak 0 vekZ Zvi tKv t b c 0 k 0  
 DĒi ৱ tZ b bv| H ৱkytKi K ৱt m ৱZ ৱb mevi t k t l b ৱi t e etm ৱK tZ b | tKej  
 fve tZ b, GK eQi, ৱ<sup>১</sup> eQi, Gf ৱt e Avi KZ eQi GLv t b K ৱU tZ n t e | 1871 m ৱt j i  
 ৱW t m ৱ<sup>১</sup> t gv t m ৱZ ৱb bg 0 ঐ i I 0 eQ t i i cov t k l K t i m B g eQ t i i cov i i a K t i b |

<sup>1</sup> i ex<sup>১</sup> ৱv\_ VvKz, Rieb ৱZ (cK ৱk Kvj -1421, Kj K ৱZv, ৱek fvi Zx Mš b ৱe f ৱM), c., 26-27

1872 mvtj i tdeqwi gvtm bgfj -tj i cov eU Kti w`tq Zvt`i fivZ©Kivtbn nq  
 wdwi w`2cãvb -tj 0te½j GKvfwig0tZ| Zv-l gvP©1872 mvtj | Gevi iex`bv`\_i  
 BstiiR cov iiaetjv| GLvfb iex`bv`\_i BstiiR ev j`vUv ve`v AR0 tnvK Avi  
 bvB-ev tnvK -tj cvj vtbv ve`vUv GKevti AvqE Kti wbtj b|  
 mncvVxt`i Drcxotb μgvštq Avi l uech©lntq ctob iex`bv`\_| Avffvekt`i bv-  
 Rvntq -tj cvtj vtbvi B"Qvq Qvdi Avte`b RvbtZb KZetjyi wBKU| Zui `v`v`i  
 divim wkyK gbnk0R GKvR Zui eo mnvqK wQtb| 0te½j GKvfwigi0 -tj i  
 covtbn (1874-1876) ev` w`tq 0tmU tRwfvqm0 -tj fivZ©Kivtbn ntjv -tjveivMx  
 -faxbtPZv evj K iex`bv`\_tK| i wZbnZi teovRvtj ev` 0vbZ"-AvevZ Nvmbi mt½0  
 NjtZ \_vKv ve`vj qtk tRj Lvbn l nvmcvZj etj gtb ntZv Zui| ZvB ve`vj q  
 wkyvtK mv`ti M0Y KitZ cvitj b bv| `v`viv Zui ve`vj tq tj Lvcovi AvkvB tQto  
 w`tqQj | GKv`b Zvi eov`w` tmS`vugvb (1847-1920) l ejtj b, 0Avgiv mKtj B  
 Avkv Kvi qvQj vg, etov nBtj i ve gvbtl i gZv nBte, wKŠ`Zvvi AvkvB mKtj i tPtq  
 bó ntq tMj |0<sup>1</sup> -tjZ`vMi mvt\_ mvt\_ mvmwi K gvb`tD Zui tMŠievi AfbKvstk Ktg  
 tMj | \_iaRtbiv ZvK wZi`vi Kiv chŠl tQto w`tj b| tKej GKRBb ZvK wbtq  
 GLtbn -cet`tLb-wZvb tR`vZwi>`bv\_ (1849-1925)| KviY wZvb RvbtZb, tRvi Kti  
 i vetK w`tq tKvbn KvRB Kivtbn hvq bv, GUvB Zui cKwZ.|

### **-tjRvxtbi KtqKw -tjZ**

evj K i ve wKB eStZ cvitj b 0f`mgvtrRi evRvti0 Zui K`i Ktg hv`Q| iwei gtb  
 wkykt`i e`vcvti cvRvUf aviYv bv\_vKtj l tmU tRwfvqm0 -tj i `Rb Aa`vcK  
 wQtb Zui KvQ GK`g e`wZμg| dv`vi wv tctbiv0v l dv`vi tnbwi wQtb mKtj i  
 w0 wkyK| dv`vi wv tctbiv0vi mt`m AvPiY evj K iex`bv`\_tK gy KtiwQj | Zvi th  
 enr gtb i t`Lv wZvb tctqt0b Zv mWZ` tfvjvi bq| Zui m`utK©iex`bv`\_ etjt0b,  
 0AvRI Zvrv -ŠiY Kvi tj Avng thb wbfZ. w`ä t`egw`ti gta` c0ek Kvi evi  
 AvvKvi cvB|0<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> iex`bv`\_ VvKz, Rvxt -tjZ (cKvKvj -1421, Kj KvZv, vekfvi Zx MŠbvefivM), c., 75

<sup>2</sup> c0. B, c., 76



KtiŋQj | Zui fvlvq: ōth-iweevi mKvtj ŋZib bv AvmŋZb, tm-iweevi Avgvi KvtQ  
iweevi ewj qvB gtb nBZ bv|<sup>1</sup>

teviēvi ŋbqŋG Mvŋbi PPP<sup>2</sup>ntZv ŋeōP>^a PmeZŋ KvtQ| GQovl K'vtŋf tgmŋKj  
-ŋj i R%bK Qvŋi KvtQ ŋkyŋMŋY KiŋZ ntZv Aw'ne`v, tnb^ZĒj Zægkvtqi KvtQ  
ŋgkz` mŋ "Pvb`sō t\_ŋK i'iaKti ŋgytevaō Gi mĤ gŋ' Kiv| BŋiŋR ŋkyvi cĒj  
AvMŋni tmB hŋM t`te>`bv\_ VvKz` emoi tQvŋt`i Rb` evsj v fvlvq tj Lvcovi e`e`v  
KtiŋQj b| Zvt`i t`Lvŋkvbri `ŋqŋZ; ŋbtqŋRZ tmR`v`v tntg>`bv\_ VvKzi cĒZ  
Mfxi KZĀZv Rŋbtq iex`bv\_ VvKz` ŋj tLŋQb: ōŋQj tejvq evsj v cŋotZŋQj vq  
ewj qvB mg`l gbŋvi Pvj bv m^e nBqŋQj | ŋkyŋ-ŋRŋbmŋv h\_v m^e Avnvi e`vcŋi i  
gŋZv nI qv DŋPZ|...evŋŋj i cŋy BŋiŋR ŋkyvq GŋU nBeri tRv ŋbB|...cŋg nBŋZB  
gbŋŋK Pvj bv Kŋiēvi mŋhŋM bv cvBŋj gŋbi Pj rkŋ<sup>3</sup>ŋZB g>`v cŋoqv hvq|<sup>2</sup>

G ŋelŋ GKŋU NUbv cĒbavbŋhŋM, iex`bvŋ\_i ŋe`vj tqi tKvtbv GKRB ŋkyK  
ŋKŋkvix ŋgŋb ŋgŋi iŋPZ Zui ŋcZigŋni BŋiŋR Rŋebx cotZ tPŋŋQj b| ZvB  
GKŋ`b evj K mZ`cŋh` Zui gvZvgn t`te>`bv\_ VvKzi KvtQ eBŋU PvbŋZ ŋMŋq ōmvay  
tMŋoxq fvlvqō K\_v etj ŋQj b| mZ`cŋh` tŋŋŋQj b, mŋavi Y cĒKZ.fvlvq K\_v evj v  
ŋWK nte bv| GK\_v tkvbri ci t`te>`bvŋ\_i aviYv ntqŋQj emotZ Gŋ`i ŋWK evsj v  
tkLv nt`Q bv| ŋZib evj Kŋ`i emotZ evsj v cov eŋ Kivi ŋbt`R ŋ`ŋŋQj b| GB  
NUbvi ga` ŋ`ŋq cŋŋi emi Kfvte evsj v tkLvŋbri cĒZ ŋetkl `ŋō I evj Kŋ`i tj Lvcov  
ŋelŋ Zui ŋPŋŋfvebri cĒkvk NŋŋŋQ| kvŋŋŋi Kfvte mŋmej I ej etb nI qvq  
tQj tejv t\_ŋKB iex`bv\_ tek PĀj cĒŋZi | Mŋvq mŋZvi Kvŋv, cvŋŋŋ iv`ŋq tntŋ  
teovŋv, GgbŋK Rŋŋv-I emotZ Abŋŋj b KiŋZb|

Zui Lŋ Aŋcŋ ŋelq ŋQj BŋiŋR| Lŋ Kg eqŋmB ŋZib cto tŋj b bxj gŋb emvK  
Abŋ`Z Avie` Dcb`vm, cvim` Dcb`vm, CkŋP>^a ŋe`vmŋMi iŋPZ teZvj cĀŋeskŋZ,  
tŋŋŋŋj ŋŋŋdvi iŋPZ iŋebmb μŋŋv, gŋŋ`b gŋLvcv`vq iŋPZ mŋŋj vi DcvL`vb,  
grm` brix i K\_v, DgvPiY ŋgŋi tMŋj eKvI ŋj, nŋi bv\_ gRŋ`ŋi i tj Lv ŋeRq emŋŋ  
nŋi ō>^a ZKŋ 1/4ŋi i ivRv cĒvcŋ`Z` PŋiĤ, CkŋP>^a ŋe`vmŋMŋi i (1820-1891)  
tevtav`q, mŋZvi ebevŋ, AŋqKŋvi `ŋĒi Pviŋv, c`v`ŋe`v, mŋZKŋŋ `ŋĒi

<sup>1</sup> iex`bv\_ VvKz, Rŋeb`ŋZ (cĒkvkKvj -1421, Kj KvZv, ŋekfvi Zx MŋŋbŋefŋM), c., 32

<sup>2</sup> cĒ\_B, c., 45

cŏYme`v, tjvniivg ũktiviŧZi ev½jv e`vKiY, nwiŌ`ª ũbtqmXi `tL miv½bx, ũenvixvj PµeZŦ (1835-94) mvi`vg½j, mÁxe PŧÆvcva`vq¹-Gi cijvtgš, ũŌŧR`ŧvj ivq (1833-1913) Gi g`ŧ, Avlvŧp, `ŧbKp`ª tmŧbi (1866-1939) e½fvlv l mũvZ, AÿqKqvi ^gŧŦqŏi ũmivRŧŦšjv, mihŧvjv `vk, ŧBi emšl cŏvY-Gi gŧZv me Avŧj ũPZ eB|

1873 mvtj Wvj ŧnšũm ^kj knŧii ũbKU eŧµvUvi evstjvq eŧm iex`bv\_ ũcZvi ũbKU t\_ŧK BstiiR, ms`ũZ. Mšveij, ŧeÄvngb dñv½vij b² cŏly e`v³eŧMŦ RxebMšmn GwIqvW©Meb iũPZ ` ũũv÷ª Ad ` ũWkvBb dj Ad ` tivgvb Gªúqvi cov tkl Kŧib| GQovl tR`ũZŦeÁvb, mvariY ũeÁvb l BũZnvŧmi ũbqvqZ cvV i`iæ Kŧib| Zui ever t`te`bv\_ VvKž ZŧŧK Kwij `vm iũPZ aŧw` Kve, bvUK l Dcũbl` cŧv AbŧŦYZ Kŧib|

## GK Ab`iKg Avb`

AgZmŧi ägYKŧj tj Lv covi mgq eũevi ũbKU ũkÿvi Ab`iKg GK Avb` tctj b iex`bv\_| G `eũPŦ`gq `ŧ Dcŧfvŧmi ŧcQŧb Ab`Zg KviY ũQj- ũcZv gnũl© t`te`bv\_ VvKž eũ`Rxeŧbi evBŧi ZŧŧK cY©`ŧaxbZv jvŧfi mŧhũM ũŧqũŧj b| Zui ũkLb tKškj l ũQj mRbkxj | ägYŧkŧl ũcZv t`te`bv\_ VvKž ũeŧKŧj WvKevstjvq tčšŧŦ evBŧi tPšũK ũbtq emŧZb| mŪ`vi AvKvŧk hLb Zviv, tjv ũglũglũŧq Rj ŧZv gnũl© t`te`bv\_ VvKž cŧŧŧK Mŧ-Zviv, tjv ũPũbtq Gici tR`ũZŦ© ũelŧq Avŧj vPbv KiŧZb|

ŧŦjŧK covŧeb etj Kj KvZv t\_ŧK ŐPeters parley's Tales' chŧŧqi tek ũKŦzeB mŧ½ Kŧi ũbtq Gŧj b| GQovl Zvi Rb` AgZmi l eŧµvUvq cvVŧbv nŧqmŦj ŐJohnson's pockets Dictionary, ŐfviZeŧlŦ cŧveŦŦ l Lethbridge Gi tjLv ŐHistory of India' eB, tjv| GZme cvW` DcKiY msMŧni ga` ũŧq GKũU ũelq `úó nq, gnũl© t`te`bv\_ VvKž ũe`vj qũegly cŧŧŧK ũbR`^c×ũZŧZ cũŧŧq ũe`vbiũMx Kivi tPŧvB ŧevanq KŧiũŦj b| ũkÿKŧ`i mªúŧK©Zvi gŧb th aviYv exgj- nŧqmŦj ũZũb Zui ũecixŧZ cvV ũbKŧj bZly GK aviYvi RbŧũŧZ mÿg nŧqmŦj b|

<sup>1</sup> mÁxe PŧÆvcva`vq (1834-89) eũŧgPŧ`ŧ AMŦ|

<sup>2</sup> Benjamin Franklin (January 17, 1706 – April 17, 1790)

iwek covbvi mgq QvĀ-ikÿK fwiZi c\_ cwi nvi Kti `RtbB thb QvĀ, `RtbB thb  
ikÿK Ggb civ vb tKškj MhY Kti iQtb| Avi GiB mgj wntmte wZb gv̄mi āgY  
mgqB RxbhvĀ I tj Lvcovq mk;Lj KiZ tcti iQtb iwek|

Bsti iR tR wZi eB t\_ tK wZib cÿtK gÿL gÿL evstq i tZb, iwe Gici Zv myi  
Kti evsj vq wj LtZb| GfvteB Bsti iR I evsj v fvl vtK AvqĒ KiZ ikl LtqtQb|

ie x`bv\_ e`vwi ÷vi nevi Dātk 1878 mtj i 20 tm̄P<sup>†</sup> gvĀ mtZtiv eQi eqtm  
tm̄Rv`v mtZ`bv\_i (1842-1923) mt½ cYv bvgK RvntR Pto cwi Rgvb  
Bsj`vtŪ| eĀBUB I tnv̄fi tgw̄bv wfvq VvKz cwi ev̄ti i GKwU emotZ cŪtg Ae`vb  
Ktib| mtZ`bv\_i cZ<sup>†</sup> tQjtgtq`i (mtj>bv\_ I Bw`iv) mt\_ tmLvtbB evm  
KiZb| GLvtbiB GKwU`<sup>†</sup> wZib covtkvbv Kti iQtb| hv Gt`kxq D`P cŪwgK  
we`vj q mgch<sup>†</sup>qi |

cwi ev̄ti i mevi aviYv iQj ie x`bv\_ hv̄ j Ūtb \_vtKb Zvntj covtkvbvq Avak  
ḡbv̄thvMx n̄eb| ZvB wq ÷vi ZvKbv\_ cwi j Z vtK j Ūtb wbtq Avmtj b| j`wub  
ikÿtKi cwi ev̄ti i Ašf<sup>†</sup> n̄tq ie x`bv\_ emotZ`<sup>†</sup> wZbRb ikÿtKi wBKU cto j Ūb  
BDwbfvmm<sup>†</sup> Ktj tRi Bsti iR m̄vntZ`i Kt̄m QvĀ n̄tj b| ZLbKvi weL`vZ m̄vntZ`K  
gwj`<sup>†</sup> avZŪq Rb I tnbwi iQtb ie x`bv\_i ikÿK|<sup>1</sup>

e`vwi ÷vwi nevi th AwfcŪq wbtq wZib j Ūtb w̄mq iQtb m̄vntZ`PP<sup>†</sup> AvKI<sup>†</sup> tkl ch<sup>†</sup>  
wZib mgvB KiZ cv̄ti bwb| Bsj`vtŪ`vKtZB tk· wq̄ti i Bsti iR m̄vntZ` Ges Bsti iR  
m̄vntZ`i Ab`vb` weL`vZ m̄vntZ`Kt`i iPbvi mt\_ Zv̄i cwi Pq NtU| G mgq wZib  
wek̄l ḡbv̄thvM mnKv̄ti civ Ktib w̄w̄j wRi tgw̄wP, tKw̄i I t̄j bvm Ges A`vUwb I A`vŪ  
wKt̄ tCU<sup>†</sup>|

cŪq t`o eQi Bsj`vtŪ KwĀtq 1880 mtj e`vwi ÷vwi cov tkl bv Kti tKv̄bv w̄w̄w̄  
QvovB t`tk w̄d̄ti Av̄mb| Zte wejvZ cēv̄mi dtj ie x`bv\_ thgm Bsti iR fvlv  
AvqĒ Ki t̄j b tZgb w̄k̄L w̄btj b Bsti iR Mvb I Bsti iR Pvj Pj b|

---

<sup>1</sup> LtM`bv\_ P̄t̄v̄cva`vq, ie x`K\_v (cKvkKuj -1422, Kuj KvZv, RqkŪ cÿKuj q), c., 167



# ZZxq cwi t"Q`

## mwnZ"RMtZ c0ek

ie`bv\_i gj cwiPq wZwb GKRB Kwe| gvI AvU eQi eqtm wZwb Kve"iPbv iia  
Ktib| RxeTb c0g th KweZvi mv\_t Zvi gTbi thvMmF`Zwi nq Zv ntjv 0Rj cto  
civZv bto0| KweZwU covi mgq Gi Qt`vgq SsKvi Zwi gbTK`viaYfite biov t`q/  
Qt`i MwZgqZvq GK AvTj woZ`u`b Abfye Ktib Avcb Kwe mEvq| gTbi Mfxi  
t\_tK tRtM DVv Qt`i c0Z Kwei GB Am`e fvtjv jvMv gbTK Avb` fwtq t`q/  
%kke t\_tKB mwnZ"im Av`r`tb GK Ab`iKg Avb` LtR tctZb ie`bv\_|  
Qovi gTzv ka"Quv I Qt`i t`vjv t`qv KwnubcYQov etj iki ie`bv\_i gTbvi Ab  
KiZb LvRwAvev`Kjvk gTlvca"vq| Avi tmB Qovi Kwnubi bvaK wQtb`qs  
ie`bv\_| GB MíK\_vq Zwi iki gb thgb D"PwKZ ntZv Zvi tPtq Avi I tenk Qt`i  
AvteMgqx t`vjvq tbtP DVtZv Q`iwmK ie`bv\_| Qt`i Ace`f`vjvq Kí bvi  
wePíivR" nwtq thZb| Q` I Qovi Avcb gwngv`kke t\_tKB ie`a`ü`qgvTS  
fvtjvevmvi mj tZvtj | %kkte 0ey0 cto Uvcjy-Uzjy bt`i Gj evb0 QovwU covi mgq  
ZtK Ly AvteM-Avcz KtiwQj | cieZPZ Zwi KvQ gtb ntqtQ GUvB wQj Zwi  
RxeTb 0%kktei tgN`Z0| Avi GfiteB %kkte ie`bv\_i mwnZ" imtfiMi mly"Qwei  
mUvb tgtj | hv Zwi mwnZ"PPA mFcvZ NUvq| Q` I Qovi gTbvix cFve Avi  
PvKi t`i gntj c0wz Z eB G wbtq mwnZ" mwi c0vfm mvgTbi w`tK GwMtq Ptb  
ie`bv\_| PvKi gntj c0wz Z eB`tjvi gta" PvYK`tkutKi evsjv Abv` I Kwevm  
ivgvqYB c0vb| G c0stM GKwU NUbv DttLthvM`- GKw`b mZ`c0v` Mt1vcra"vq  
(1859-1933) (tmS`wgbxi tQtj) ie`bv\_tK cwy tki fq t`Lvq| cwy tki K\_v  
ibtZB fxZ ie`bv\_ Ntíi wfZi gntj gvtqi KvQ QZU hvq Avi gvtK LeiwU i`bvq/  
Gici wZwb Avi gvtqi KvQ tQto evBti thZ mwnm tctj b bv| gvtqi Ntíi`iRvi  
KvQ etm AvZkq m`utK` GK w`w`gvi KvQ t\_tK gvtj`KvMRgwdZ tKivY tQov-  
gj vUl qvjv gwj b KwevTmi ivgvqY eBLwb wbtq cotZ`vtKb| Gi GKwU tkwK covi  
mgq gbUv Zvi AvteM-Avcz nq| GgbwK GKch`q wZwb KuTZ`vtKb| GfiteB  
ivgvqtYi gg`uk`eY0v Qz hvq ie`bv\_tK|  
eZ0vb Aa`vtqi c0g cwi t"Qt` ie`bv\_i evj`Kvj m`utK`AvTj vPbv Kiv ntqtQ/  
Avgiv AvtMB tRtbwQ ie`bv\_i evj`Kvj KvUvtZ ntqtQ PvKi t`i kwtb| tmLvTb

Zui `kktei t`e eiv`AZ te`br`vqK Riebhrctbi KiaY wPÎ d#U D#V#Q| Avi GiB  
 wfZi w`tq AvMvgxi m#okxj myi fiel`tZ m#v#Z`PP# Dcv`vb L#R wbtqtQb  
 iex`bv\_| A#t#cy, evB#ii gnj, emoi evB#ii RMr tRvovm#Kv#ii VvK#emoi  
 wki#i Rb` w#wl x`\_vKvq AvcbR#bi t`e-fv#jvevmv eiv`AZ GB eiv`Rxe#b wki  
 iex`bv\_`y#PvL t#tj gb Avi wP#t#K c#m#i Z K#i inm`#Niv femsmv#t#K GKv#š  
 Avcb K#i Dc#fv#M K#i#Qb| g#bi is w#uj t#q G#K#Qb Gi b#v#v c#Z`Q#e|  
 fZ#i Ab#v#m#b fxZm#š;#l wQ#j b iex`bv\_| Zv#i fq t`Lv#v AR#v#v w#c#i  
 Avk#v#q L#o w`tq AvK#v M#D bv-g#v#o#q GiB wfZi P# K#i e#m`\_vK#Zb| Avi GB  
 fZ`k#v#m#Z eiv`Rxe#b R#v#j#v w`tq Z#v#K#q c#K#Z#i %wPÎ#gq Ace#m#š`h#g#b f#i  
 t`L#Zb| evB#ii RM#Z#i m#t#\_ R#e#t#eva Avi m#v#Z`i#mi Ace#g#j b N#U#q Av#e#M-  
 Av#z# n#q co#Zb| Avi G#fv#e#B Avcb K#e#Z#i k#v#i`\_i`\_i`Y t#R#M DVZ wbt#R#i wfZi |  
 R#v#j#v#i d#k w`tq t`Lv- N#U e#v#v#v c#k#i b#v#v#R#bi t#B`\_#bi`\_k`, ivR#v#v-  
 c#v#Z#v#m#i c#v#b#Z# W#z t`qv, #M#j Z#j L#l qv, P#Z#P#j bv, w#c#v#i c#j#K m#v#d K#v#i  
 iK#v#i me`\_k` w#gy b#q#b Z#v#K#q t`L#Zb iex`bv\_| G#e t`#L L#B Av#b`  
 t#t#Zb!`#Z#i Av#q#v#q c#k#i c#v#t#K#i t#B P#v#v e#U#M#Q, `w#y#Y#i m#v#i m#v#i b#v#i#K#j  
 M#v#Q iex`\_wki g#t#K L#B b#v#v w`Z| G#e`\_k` Dc#fv#t#M#i wfZi w`tq#B K#e Avcb  
 `#L#t#eva#K R#q K#i GK b#Z#b Av#b#`\_i th#M K#i#Qb| Z#v#t#Z#v w#Z#b m#\_#Z#v R#q#M#v#  
 t#M#t#q#Qb Av#Z#v#m#Z eiv`Rxe#bi Rb`| G iKg GK#U c#v#v#v#Z#i g#a` w`tq#l KZ  
 P#gr#v#i fv#e iex`bv#\_i m#v#Z`PP# exR A#v#i Z n#t#q#Q| hv Zui m#R#b#k#j g#bi  
 c#K#v#k N#U#t#q#Q|

**Kve`m#p#i t#e#Y#v**

w#Z#b th gv# AvU eQi eq#m K#e#Z#v wj L#Z`\_i`i`æ K#i#b G K#e#Z#v t#j L#v#i t#e#Q#b Zui  
 f#v#M#t#b#q k#h#y t#R`#v#Z#c#K#v#k Gi f#v#K#v D#j L#th#M`| k#h#y t#R`#v#Z#c#K#v#k (1855-  
 1919) i#e#i t`\_#K eq#m m#v#g#v#` GKU#z#e wQ#j b| w#Z#b iex`bv#\_#K c#q#v#Q#t#`\_i`\_i`P#š#  
 A#y#i th#M#t#h#t#M#i c#x#Z e#v#t#q w`tq g#v#g#t#K(iex`bv#\_#K) K#e#Z#v i#P#v#i Rb` D#r#m#v#  
 w`#Z`\_#t#K#b|

iex`bv\_ f#v#M#t#b#q Gi Ab#j#v#t#a c#q#v#Q#t#`\_m#p#i Z#v#o#v#q f#t#q f#t#q K#e#Z#v i#P#v#q e#Z#x  
 n#t#j#b| B#v#Z#g#a` w#Z#b t#R#v#M#v#o K#i w#t#j#b K#e#Z#v t#j L#v#i b#j K#v#M#t#R#i L#v#Z#v| Avi G#U#  
 m#s#M#h K#i w`#t#j#b Z#v#`\_i#B GK Kg#P#v#i#x| GB b#j#v K#v#M#t#R#i L#v#Z#v iex`bv#\_i t#i#v#g#v#U#K

gbUvK Kve"iPbvi AwfjvLi mvt\_ Avil eũgnlK fvebvi mgšq Niluq GK cŃY  
PvAj" ifc `vb Kitjv| KveZv iPbvi tmB cŃugK cŃPóvK Kve GfvteB eYŃv  
KtiQb, Ń-Ń-Ńtcbmj w`tq KZ,tjv Amgvb jvBb KvlUqv etov etov Klv Avti  
c`" wj wLtz`i iæKvi qv w`jvg|Ń

wZvb th tKej wj Ltj b Zv bq, mKj tK Zui KveZv tkvbvevi Rb" e"vKž nq DVtj b/  
Zui GB e"vKž Zv tK hw`l iex`bv\_ eij Kmjvf DrcvZ etj Dtj L KtiQb| Zte be  
mŃi Djv tM G tgv tUl AwZi wAZ wQj bv| mŃvZ" mvabvi eZ wbtq KveZvi fzb tK  
`vMZ Rvbv tjb| G tKi ci GK wj Ltz`i iæ Ktib| KveZv tj Lvi Rb" iex`bv\_  
cwi evi t\_ tK wewfbvte DrmŃv tctZ \_vtKb| wtkl Kti Zui eo (Ń eQti) `v`v  
tmvtg`bv\_ Zv tK KveZv iPbvq DrmŃvZ Ktib| iex`bv`i KveZvi tkŃZv msMŃ  
Kizb `v`v tmvtg`bv\_| VvKževoi KvQvvi Avgj v`i KveZv tkvbv tvi evBti l  
bZb tkŃZv ifc tctj b Ńbv`kbyj tccvi Ń cwi Kvi m`uv`K kŃhŃ be tMvcvj wġ tK|  
iex`bv`i KveZv i`tb hLb be tMvcvj wġ A\_Ńxb ktai Rb" nvm tjb ZLb Kvei  
gbUv Lvivc nq tMj | wZvb fvetj b, be tMvcvj wġ KveZvi K`i tvtSb bv| Kvi l  
mŃKgfK cksmŃv KitZ bv Kitj l AeAvi `wŃZ Dtcyv Kiv mgwPZ bq| G tZ Gi  
wbgvZv thgb Zvi `ŃKwZi AwKvi t\_ tK ewAZ nb tZgb Zvi AvMŃteva nŃv tq hvq  
A\_ev wZvb GK\_v ej tZ eva" nb wZvb Gi DchŃ mgR`vi bb| nqtZv mgtqi  
cwi tctŃy tZ Zvi G avi Yv fž cŃwYZ nq| Zey mRbkj Zvi Avb` t\_ tK ewAZ nZ  
Pvq bv Kvegb| Zv tZv iex`bv tM GB Kvlb mtZ`i cŃZdj b NtU tQ|  
evj K Kve iex`bv\_ Rvqvi ctK tU KveZvi Kvc,tjv Rgv ivL tZb| cŃg w`tK bxj  
LvZvi KveZv,tjv iex`bv`i mŃvZ"PPŃ cŃi wK cŃPóvi dmj -tQ tjtj vq Kve gtb  
cKvk gvġ| Gme tj Lv iex`bv\_ wbtRB Qvcvi A thvM" etj gtb KtiQb| ZvB  
tQ tjtj vi Kve"iPbvi tmB LvZvU Aw`Zj;bv\_vKvq KveZv,tjv thgb Qvcvi nvZ t\_ tK  
tetP tQ tZgb wKŃv n tj l `Ń-Ńtctq tQb iex`bv\_| Kvi Y`kktei A tK tj LvB wZvb  
cKvk thvM" gtb Ktibv, Zvicti l cKvk Kt`i nvZ chŃ tcsŃvi mgt` cKvk Kt`i  
`wŃ Gov tZ cvti w| tkl chŃ Zv-l Qvcv nqt tQ| ZvB bxj LvZvi KveZv,tjv nŃv tq  
hvl qvq iex`bv\_B tenk `Ń-Ńtctq tQ tjb|

<sup>1</sup> gvtj Kv telg, iex`bv\_: ŃRieb`ŃZ: GK, (cKvkKjv -2011, XvKv, gaŃ), c., 38

tj LKtK Drmvin cŭvb GKw̄ tK thgb Zui wj LubtZ Muz mÂvi Kti Abw̄ tK Avcb  
mōRMtZi cŭZ AvKI<sup>9</sup> ewx̄ cvq| dtj wekij mvinZ<sup>m</sup> mōi be tčŭYvq GwMtq  
Ptj b wkī -mvinZ<sup>i</sup> c\_ atj | cwī cwiK<sup>R</sup> Aven Avi GKvšl̄ KvŕQi gvbŕi t̄ i Drmvin  
Aeva MuztZ GwMtq Pj wQj i ex̄`bv̄\_i Kve<sup>PP</sup> ̄žwkyKt̄ i wBKU t\_tKI Drmvin  
tctZ j vMtj b| Gt̄ i gta<sup>m</sup> mVZKw̄ `È gkvq Avi tMve<sup>ē</sup> eveyčŕjLi bvg wekI fivte  
Dtj t̄thvM<sup>l</sup> | Zviv Zui KweZv tkvbi Rb<sup>m</sup> i ex̄`bv̄\_tK KweZv tj Lvi wbt̄ R w̄ tZb| hv  
Kwei KvŕQ cig Avbt̄`i wētq cwiYZ n̄qiwQj | wKš<sup>m</sup> mncvVt̄`i AvPiŕY Kwe  
Pigfivte AvkvZ I Akām<sup>3</sup> n̄qiwQj b-Zv̄`i avi Yv wQj i ex̄`bv̄\_ Aŕb<sup>i</sup> tj Lv Pw̄  
Kti wbt̄Ri bŕtg Pw̄j t̄q w̄ t<sup>m</sup>Ob| Zv̄`i G aiŕbi tQvU gŕbi cwiPtq ej K Kwe  
i ex̄`bv̄\_ gvivZKfivte RR<sup>9</sup> Z n̄Zb|

t̄ te<sup>ē</sup> bv̄\_ VvKt̄i i eŭZkŭKÉ wmsn eveyGKubô tkŭZv wnt̄mte Kwei gb Rq Kti wQj b|  
tmKvŕj dviw cov i wMk gvbly kŭKÉveynw̄`i t̄mB Af<sup>m</sup> t̄ wQj b, Avevi Kiaŕ i t̄mI  
`ŕjLZ n̄Zb| wZwb thgb i ex̄`bv̄\_i KweZvi tkŭZv wQj b, tZgub Zvi Mvŕbi wkl<sup>m</sup>  
wQj b i ex̄`bv̄\_ | Zvi m̄úŕK<sup>9</sup> i ex̄`bv̄\_ etj tQb, ŭKweZv tkvbi Bervi Ggb Abk̄j- tkŭZv  
mnt̄R t̄gtj bv̄| Sibvi aviv thgb GKUK<sup>i</sup> v b̄y cvBtj I Zvrv̄tK wNwi qv wNwi qv bwiPqv  
gvZ Kwi qv t̄ q, wZwb tZgub th-tKvŕbv GKUv Dcj ŷ cvBtj B Avcb Dj w̄m D`tej  
nBqv Dv̄tZb| ŭ<sup>1</sup>

tQj tejvq eveli m̄t̄ M̄zvi tev̄U teov̄bvi mgq c̄t̄t̄Qb MxZtMve<sup>ē</sup> | ZLb  
tev̄Sbwb Gi gg<sup>9</sup> t̄Kej MxZ I Q<sup>ē</sup> Zt̄K gy Kti t̄Q| Kve<sup>t̄mš</sup> h<sup>9</sup> Zt̄K GZUvB  
AvKž Kti wQj th, MxZtMve<sup>ē</sup> c̄ji vUvB LvZvq wj t̄L wbt̄t̄Qb| GKUzeo eq̄m K̄gvi  
m̄ē covi mgq gb Zui t̄gtZ D̄v̄wQj tk̄K-i t̄m| w̄`vj qwegly AvZw̄bgM̄e fveK̄  
c̄Kw̄Zi GB t̄Qj w̄i gv̄t̄S w̄Zv t̄ te<sup>ē</sup> bv̄\_ VvKž Ggb w̄KQzwb`k̄ t̄ t̄LwQj b m̄ēZ  
tm Kvi t̄YB Zui e<sup>w̄</sup> t̄Zji weKvk NUv̄tZ 1872 m̄tj i t̄de<sup>9</sup> w̄i gv̄t̄m w̄gvj t̄qi D̄t̄ t̄k  
hv̄v̄ Kti wQj b| teij c̄ji Ae<sup>v</sup> vbKv̄tj Zui w̄Zv Zt̄K fM̄eZMxZvi w̄KQzevQvB Kiv  
tk̄K K̄w̄ Kiv Ges evsjvq Ab̄v̄` Kivi KvR w̄ t̄j b|

w̄Zvi m̄t̄ teij c̄ji Ae<sup>v</sup> vbKv̄tj w̄ki i ex̄`bv̄\_ evMv̄t̄bi c̄t̄šl̄ bwi t̄Kj Mv̄t̄Qi wbt̄P  
gv̄w̄t̄Z et̄m cv̄ w̄w̄t̄q tiv̄`i D̄Ėt̄c Kve<sup>R</sup> t̄bwiPZ ḡt̄b̄v̄e wbt̄q i Pbv̄ Kti wQj b  
ŭc̄w̄j v̄t̄Ri civRqŭ bŕtg GKw̄ exi i m̄v̄ZK Kve<sup>l</sup> | t̄m mḡt̄qi m̄vinZ<sup>PP</sup> LvZv wQj

<sup>1</sup> gv̄t̄j Kv̄ teMg, i ex̄`bv̄\_: ŭR̄x̄eb<sup>v̄</sup> Z: GK, (c̄Kv̄kKvj -2011, Xiv̄, ga<sup>9</sup>), c., 46

Vetts Dairy | Avi GB Vetts Dairy tZ wj tL ivLtZb meWKOz LvZvU nwi tq hvl qvq  
Kve`uI l mÜvb cvl qv hvqub | GUV wj LtZ Zui cÜq GK mBvn tj tMwQj | i ex`bv\_  
etj tQb, ÖGKw`b Avgvi i wPZ `BwU cigvU`K KweZv kÜKÉevej wBKU i wqv wCZt`e  
nwmqWQj b | Zvvi cti etov eqtm Avi GKw`b Avng Zvvi tkva jBtZ  
cwi qWQj vg |<sup>1</sup> Avgv`i avi Yv GLv`b tkva ej tZ Kwe enStqtQb- wbtRi `gZv  
KwUtq mvdj` AR<sup>2</sup> KitZ tcti tQb |

## we`vmMti i mt½ mvjv

emotZ iaUw Kti covq i ex`bv\_ KLtBvB gtbvthvMx ntZ cvtibw | ZvB i ex`bv`i  
gvbwKZvi mt\_ msMwZ titL`ia Kiv nq ZvtK wKlvbvi cÜqv | wkyK ÁvP>`<sup>a</sup>  
fAvPvh<sup>©</sup> covtZ`ia Ktib ÖKgvim<sup>æ</sup>Ö I Ög`vKte\_Ö | i ex`bv\_ Ög`vKte\_Ö Gi evsjv  
Abv` Ktib tj Lv covi Ask wntmte | Avi G Abv` tK wZw i wbtqWQj b CkP>`<sup>a</sup>  
we`vmMi tK | GB Dcj tÿ GwUB wQj we`vmMti i gZv GKRB weÜvb e`w<sup>3</sup>i mt\_  
Zui cÜg`k | wZw hLb GB Abv` w igme<sup>©</sup>^gnvkqK mt\_ Kti we`vmMi tK  
i bvtZ hvb ZLb tmLv`b emv wQj b ivRKÖ. gJLvca`vq, tmB cig gyZwÜi eYvq  
wZw etj b, Öcy`K-fiv Zvvi Nti i gta` XwKtZ Avgvi etj`jæ`jæ KwitZwQj ; Zvvi  
gJ`Qwe t`wLqv th Avgvi mvm ewx nBj Zvvi ewj tZ cwi bv | Bvvi cte`we`vmMti i  
gZv tkÖZv Avng tZv cvB bvB; AZGe, GLvb nBtZ L`wZ cvBeri tj vFv gtb i gta`  
Lg cÜj wQj | teva Kw wKOzDrmvn mÄq Kw qv wdw qWQj vg |<sup>2</sup>  
ÖkKšj wÜ covtZb ivgme<sup>©</sup>^fAvPvh<sup>©</sup> Zviv i ex`bv`i cKZ.Ae`vb eStZ tcti i ex`<sup>a</sup>  
Kwegvbtmi DcthvMx Kti G, t j v covtZb | G mgtq (1874-1875) i ex`bv`i eqm  
tZtiv eQi ntq KtqK gvm gv | Zte i ex`bv\_ CkP>`<sup>a</sup> we`vmMti i mt\_ cÜgeti i  
gZv cwiPq jvtfi th tmSfvM` nq Zvi gva`g wQj b ZuiB ms`Z. wkyK ivgme<sup>©</sup>^  
fAvPvh<sup>©</sup>gkvq | wZwB cÜg i ex`bv` tK we`vmMti i mt\_ cwiPq Kw tq w`tqWQj b |  
`z eBtqi evBti l i ex`bv\_ evsjv mvtZ`i Avtj wPZ cÜq me cvV`-AcvV` eB  
ctowQj b | `xbeÜzigtI i (1830-1873) ÖRvgvBvvi KÖ cÜmbwU tQvU`i cov wvü x  
wQj Zvicti l `im<sup>æ</sup>ÜK<sup>©</sup> GK AvZvqv`K t`v<sup>3</sup>v LvvtqZv Zvi PvneeÜ Avj gvvi t` tK

<sup>1</sup> gvtj Kv teMg, i ex`bv\_ : ÖRieb`Z: GK, (cKvKvj -2011, XvKv, ga<sup>®</sup>), c., 60

<sup>2</sup> i ex`bv\_ VvKz, Rieb`Z, (cKvKvj -1421, XvKv, Aemi), c., 77

tKšktj tei Kti wbtq ctoŋQtb| wZwb Avil ctoŋQb ivtR>`j vj wgtĪi (1822-91)  
 Ōweav\_@msMhō bvtgi Qwel qvj v gvwmKcĪ, ŌAtevaeŪē (bvtgi GKwU tQvU Kvm̄R wZwb  
 cĪg wenvij vj PmeZĪ KweZv ctob), em̄4gP>`ī (1838-94) Ōe½`kĪ, mvi`vPiY  
 wgtĪ I Aÿq miKvti ŌcŌPxk Kve`msMhō| GB Ōweav\_@msMhō gvwmK cwĪKvi Qvcv  
 nŋZv bnĪj wZigggrtm`i weeiY, Kvm̄Ri wePvti tKŠZKRBK Mī, KòKgvix Dcb`vm|  
 ŌAtevaeŪē cwĪKvq ctoŋQb wenvij vj PmeZĪ KweZv, wej wZ tcšj em̄Rōx Mŋī i  
 Abov` | Ōe½`kĪ-G ctoŋQb weleÿ, P>`a tkLi Dcb`vm| ŌcŌPxk Kve`msMhō-G  
 ctoŋQb we`vcwzi `jevā weKZ.gw\_j x c`vej x|

### Mŋī i cŪZ AvKIϕ

KweZv I Mŋī i eB\_ t\_jv Zuī gbtk Qto thZ| Mŋī i Kvm̄ubi mvt\_ GKvtšl nwiŋq  
 thŋZb wZwb| Avil G KvtYB wej wZ tcšj em̄Rōx Mŋī i mim evsj v Abov` covi mgq  
 AŋSvti tKtīŋQb| eva` nŋq cov Avil gtbī Avb>` cov KLtbr GK nŋZ cvti br| hv  
 i ex`bv\_ tmB evj` eqtmB Lg fvŋjv Kti Dcj wā KiŋZ tctiŋQtb| `ÿweivMx  
 i ex`bv\_ cŏZōmbK wkÿvq gtbvmbtek KiŋZ br-cvīŋj I mwinZ`PPq tmB Kg eqm  
 t\_ŋKB hŋ\_ó mRbkxj Zvi cwīPq w`ŋŋQb| we`vcwzi c`\_ t\_jv A`úó eŋj evowZ  
 gtbvŋvM AvKIϕ KtīŋQ Zuī| wbtR G c`\_ t\_jvi A`evSvi tPón KiŋZb| th mg`l  
 KwB I `jevā kã\_ t\_jv wbtR eŋŋZb br Zv tbru Kti ivLŋZb|  
 evKtŋyi LwmbvU wēlq\_ t\_jv wbtRi gŋZv Kti UxK ivLŋZb| GB covq Zuī thgb  
 tKvtbr KwšlŋQj br tZgb gbl wegÿ nŋZv br| AvRKvj tQvU`i eB Avil eot`i eB  
 eŋj th evambŋla `Zwi Kiv nŋŋŋQ i ex`bv\_ i mgŋq tm aiŋbi tKvtbr evambŋla ŋQj  
 br eŋj B wZwb me aiŋbi eB ctoŋQb| G cŏstM i ex`bv\_ eŋj b, ŌZLb tQŋŋ`i Ges  
 etov`i eBŋqi gŋa` weŋkl GKUv cv\_Ŕ` NŋU brB| Avgtv`i ctÿ ZvntZ weŋkl ŋwZ  
 nq brB| GLbKvi w`tb wkiŋ`i Rb` mwinZ`i tm cŋZ cwīgvtY Rj wgvBqv th-mKj  
 tQŋj fvŋtbr eB t\_jLv nq ZvntZ wkiw`MŋK wZvšB wki wŋj qv gtb Kiv nq|  
 Zvnt`MŋK gvby wŋj qv MY` Kiv nq br| tQŋj iv th-eB cwote Zvnti wKQzevŋste Ges  
 wKQzevŋste br, GBifc weavb \_vKv PvB| Avgiv tQŋj ŋejvq GKavi nŋZ eB cwogv  
 hvBZig; hvnt evŋZig Ges hvnt evŋZig br `B-B Avgtv`i gtbī I ci Kvr Kwi qv

hvBZ| msmviUvl tQtj t`i lci WK tZgb Kwiqv KvR Kti| Bnvi hZUKzZvnviv  
 tev tS ZZUKzZvnviv cvq, hvnv tev tS bv Znvl Znvv MtK mvg tbi w` tK tvtj |<sup>1</sup>  
 `v`v w`R>`bv\_ VvKzi Kve`c`Zfvi tQvqv evj K Kve iex`bv\_ VvKz Kve`iPbvq  
 D0y ntq weKvKz nvr`Qtj b| Aciv` tK GK\_vl wbtm t` tn ej v hvq th, VvKzemoi tmB  
 `wytYi eviv`vi Kve`itmi c`ve tQvtUvtejvtZB iex`bv`i Kvegvbtmi lci Qvc  
 tdtj wQj | evj`Kvj t` tKB iex`bv\_ KveZv i`tb Ges KveZv iPbv Kti c`Yfti  
 mvinZ`im MbtY Lg Avb>` tctZb| BstivR mvinZ` Gg.G iex`bv`i evj`my`  
 wQtj b AyqP>` a tPšajx (1850-98)| wZvb Zvi `v`v tR`wZwi>`bv\_ VvKzi mncvX l  
 eUž AyqP>` a tPšajx wQtj b D`vi-gnivfye e`w<sup>3</sup> | evj Kt`i mt½ wZvb wgtZ cvi tZb  
 evj Kt`i gtZvB| mevi gZvgZtK kkv Rvrv tvi gtZv Ac<sup>2</sup>, Yvej xi Avakvix wQtj b  
 wZvb| iex`bv\_ wbtRi tj Lv KveZv cto ZvtK tkvrvZb| Zv tkvrv ci AyqP>` a  
 tPšajx iex`bv`i cPž cksmv Kti tQb|  
 GKrb Kvei KveZj kw<sup>3</sup> i weKvtk cvwi cvnkR Aven KZ th , iæZen Zv Avgiv AvB  
 Kitz cvwi GKwU mnRmij Kve gtbi e`vKzZvi wfZi w` tq| AyqP>` a tPšajx hLb  
 Zvi `v`v`i Mt`i Avmi t` tK AtbK ivtZ tdivi c`wZ wbtZb, ZLb evj K iex`bv\_  
 l Zvi mv\_xiv ZvtK tUtb wbtq th tZb covi Nti| Avi ZvtK wbtq emZ evj Kt`i  
 KveZvi AvCv| Gfvte Avt`l Avt`l iex`bv\_ mvinZ`PPvq Mfxi fivte wbgMentj b|  
 mvinZ` m½x wntmte tctj b Kv` stx tešVvKzvYtK (tR`wZ`v`vi`x)| eqtm iex`bv`i  
 t` tK wZvb `B eQtii etov| mvinZ`im Dctfv tMi mvgwMk , Yvej xi Avakvix wQtj b  
 wZvb| Avšni K fiv<sup>3</sup> cY<sup>3</sup> fvtj vevmv l Mfxi kkv i mv t\_ wZvb cotZb w`R>`bv\_ VvKzi  
 0`cævY0, Kve wenvixvj PµeZf Omvi`v g½j 0| iex`bv\_ Kv` stx t`exi<sup>2</sup> w`c  
 mvinZ`i eB, tji vi GKvšl cvWK wQtj b| GgbwK gvtSgta` Kv` stx t`ex wenvixvj  
 PµeZfK AvgšY Rvwtq Lvl qvtZb| wbr nvtZ GKLVw Avmb evwtq l ZvtK Dcnvi  
 w` tquQtj b Kv` stx t`ex|  
 cvwi emi K mt`i GZUv Nwbôzvi Kvi tY wenvixvj PµeZf mmbta` ab` ntj b wZvb|  
 wenvixvj PµeZf mgnvb e`w<sup>3</sup> Z; Pwi w`l K gvat<sup>3</sup> Avi KveZj t`c0 Yvq gy ntq fvtZb

---

<sup>1</sup> iex`bv\_ VvKz, Rxeb`šZ, (cKvKvj -1421, XvKv, Aemi), c., 78

<sup>2</sup> Kv` stx t`ex (1859-84) tR`wZwi>`bv`i cZw

Avgt#KI Zvi gtZv wj LtZ nte|<sup>1</sup> Kv`x t`ex iex`bv\_i KueZv I Mvb wbtq  
mgvtjvPbv KitZb| Zte wZwb iex`bv\_i cksmv KitZb bv| KviY wZwb PvBtZb  
AnsKvi thb iweK tctq bv etm| iex`bv\_I wqlw eStZ tcti wQtb| ZvB Ašt i  
ZvMt` KueZv tj Lvq wbtew` Z wQtb|

---

<sup>1</sup> gvtj Kv telMg, iex`bv\_: 0Rxb`wZ0: GK, (cKvkKij -2011, XvKv, gaP), c., 78



# PZZ<sup>©</sup>cwi t"Q`

## cwi YZ mwnvZ`K intmte veKvk

gvĪ AvU eQi eqtm iex`bv\_ mwnZ`PP<sup>©</sup> iia Ktib| G hveZKvj wZwb hv wKQz  
 wj tLqob Zv Avcbv-Avcibi gta`B mvgvex itqtQ| Zui tjLbx gyYhtšj Kj`vtY  
 GLtbv KvMR-Kvuj i Qvcvi Ayti cvtKi mvgtb AvmtZ cvtiwb| wK Ggwb mgta  
 ŌAvbv¼ž<sup>1</sup> bvtg wfbavivi GKwU gvmKcĪ tei ntjv| KvMtRi KZey iex`bv\_i  
 gZv GKrb A¼zi`MZ Kwei mg`lc`cĵvc tKvrb cKvi evQvePvi QvovB KvMtR  
 tei KitZ iia Kitjv| GtZ Kwe thgb Zā ntjb tZgb Zui tjLbx cKvk tnZz  
 Avbv¼ž bvgwU Avl m\_Ŕ ntq DVj |

cĵg th M`cĕÜ iex`bv\_ wj tLb Zv-l GB ŌAvbv¼ž<sup>0</sup> KvMtR tei nq| GwU wQj  
 Mšmgvtj vPbv| ŌfzbtgwnbxcĪZfv<sup>0</sup> bvtg tm mgta GKwU KweZvi eB tei ntqWj |  
 eBLwb m<sup>u</sup>tK<sup>©</sup>meñvavi tYi avi Yv wQj wboqB GwU tKvrb gwnjvi tjLv|`qs Ayq  
 miKvi gnvkq mvari Yx l fz`eeveyGWžKkb tMtRtU GB KweZvi Avvef<sup>©</sup>tK cĕj  
 Rqert`i mvt\_ tNvl Yv KtiwQtj b|

eBwli`vrb`vrb KweZvi fvte l fvlvq iex`bv\_ Ggb wKQzAmsMwZ jÿ Kitj b hv  
 Kwei KvQ G iPbv tKvrb`x tj vtKi etj gtb ntjv bv| G welqwu wbtq wZwb Zui GK  
 eÜž mvt\_ Avtj vPbv Kitj l wZwb Kwei K\_vtK tKvrbfvteB tgb wbtZ cvitj b bv|  
 ZvB iex`bv\_ fzbtagwnbxcĪZfv,`tLm<sup>w</sup>bx l AemitiwRbx eB wZbLvbv GKĪ Kti  
 Avbv¼ž<sup>1</sup> Gi mgvtj vPbv wj Ltj b| AZ`š<sup>1</sup> wePyYZvi mvt\_ LDevK` l MmwZKvte`i  
 jÿY Kx Zv myi fvte e<sup>st</sup>q Avtj vPbv KtiwQtj b| Zui GB mgvtj vPbv t`tL  
 tKvrbfvteB tevSvi Dcvq wQj bv th, tjLKwU tKgb, Zui we`veyxi t`šo KZ|  
 KvMtR hLb tjLwU tei ntjv ZLb fzbtagwnbxi GKrb GKvš<sup>1</sup> cvVK th iex`bv\_i  
 eÜztm AZ`š<sup>1</sup> DtĒwRZ ntq KweK ejj, ŌGKrb we.G. tZvgvi GB tjLvi Reve  
 wj wLZtQb<sup>2</sup> | we.G.! G K\_v itb iex`bv\_i Avl tKvrb evK`ÜwZ<sup>©</sup>ntjv bv| G  
 mgvtj vPbv m<sup>u</sup>tK<sup>©</sup> iex`bv\_ wbtRB etj tQb, ŌAvng tPvtLi mvgtb`úó t`wLZ

<sup>1</sup> Avbv¼ž: gvmKcĪ, cKvkK thvMkP`<sup>a</sup>ep`vca`vq, Kuj KvZv, 1282| Avbv¼ž bvtg i vRkvn t`tK  
 kĪKò.`vm-Gi m<sup>u</sup>v`brq cĵg cKvk 1279; f<sup>z</sup>e g<sup>l</sup>vcia`vq, tMtRtUi m<sup>u</sup>v`K 1268; fvi Zx,`ekvl  
 1289|

<sup>2</sup> iex`bv\_ Vrkž, Rieb<sup>u</sup>Z, (cKvkKvj -1421, XvKv, Aemi), c., 93

j vMj vg, LDevK" MxvZevK" m<sup>u</sup>Ü Avng th-KxvZ<sup>o</sup>Ł Lvov Kvi qv Zvj qvQ etov etov  
tKvUkŕbi ubg<sup>o</sup> AvNvZ Zvnr mg<sup>l</sup> avj mvr nBqvŕQ Ges cvVKmgvŕR Avgvi gly  
t<sup>l</sup> LvBevi c\_ GKevŕiB eÜ| ŐKŕjY Rbg tZvi, ti mgvŕj vPbv! Ő D`teM w ŕbi ci  
w b KvUŕZ j vMj | wKš' we.G. mgvŕj vPK evj "Kvŕj i cvj mg<sup>o</sup> vbiUi gŕZvB t<sup>l</sup> Lv w ŕj b  
bv|<sup>o</sup>

## **fvi Zx cvl Kiv tj Lvŕj vl**

iev`cŕZfv weKvŕki ŕyi itqŕQ fvi Zx-i cvZvq cvZvq| Kxfvŕe fvi Zx cvl Kiv  
iev`bvŕ\_i tj Lvŕj vl i m<sup>l</sup>cvZ tm m<sup>u</sup>ŕK<sup>o</sup> wZvb vbŕRB etj ŕQb, Ő Avng Aí eqŕmi  
ŕua<sup>o</sup> teM tgNbv`etai GKvU Zxe<sup>a</sup> mgvŕj vPbv wj vl qvQj vg| Kvŕv Avŕgi imUv  
A<sup>o</sup> m, Kvŕv mgvŕj vPbv| Mvj Mj vR| Avngl GB Agi Kvŕe"i Dci bLivNvZ Kvi qv  
vbŕŕK Agi Kvi qv Zŕevi meŕcyv m<sup>o</sup>ŕf Dcvq AŕšŕY Kvi ŕZvQj vg| GB `v<sup>o</sup> K  
mgvŕj vPbvUv w ŕq Avng fvi ZxZ cŕg tj Lv Avv<sup>o</sup> Kvi j vg|<sup>o</sup>

Avgiv AvŕMB Dŕj<sup>o</sup> KŕiQ iev`bv\_ evj "Kvj t<sup>l</sup>KB GKvU mvinZ" cvl teŕk teŕo  
DŕvŕQb| Ab" w ŕK Zvi KveZk<sup>o</sup> weKvŕki Rb" ŕmB BŕiR Avŕj l VvKž cvl evŕi  
evsjv mvinZ" P<sup>o</sup> Ab<sup>o</sup> cvl tek weivRgvb vQj | cŕZfv l D`tevaŕbi `we ivŕl|  
emvŕZ Zvi tR"vZ`v vi ŕx Kv<sup>o</sup> ŕx t`ex, ŕc<sup>o</sup> vŕYi Kve mŕv`i vŕŕ<sup>o</sup> bv\_ l Zvi  
w w ŕY<sup>o</sup> gvi xi mvinZ" cŕZfv Qvqv evj K iev`bv\_i mvinZ" K cŕZfvŕK l D`tevaZ  
KŕiQ| AŕqP<sup>o</sup> a tPŕ<sup>o</sup> mŕ\_ cŕg eqŕm iev`bv\_ Kve"kv"; Avŕj vPbv KiŕZb|  
mvi`v g<sup>o</sup> ŕj i Kve wenvixj vj P<sup>o</sup> K<sup>o</sup> ŕx t`exi wŕ<sup>o</sup> ŕj LK nevi Kvi ŕY VvKžvŕj ŕq  
Zvi mvinZ" tŕZb iev`bv\_ | VvKž cvl evŕi i m`m`i mvinZ" AbjvM aŕi ivLvi Rb"  
ŕKvŕv AvŕqvRŕbi B KgvZ vQj bv| evj K t<sup>l</sup> K fvi Zx chŕŕmB cŕPóv Ae"vZ i Bj |  
gvŕ tlvŕj v eQi eqŕm wZvb fvi Zxi m<sup>o</sup> ŕv`K Pŕ<sup>o</sup> Aŕŕ<sup>o</sup> nŕj b| Avv GB fvi Zx  
cvl Kv tei nŕqvQj tR"vZw<sup>o</sup> bvŕ\_i cŕPóvq vŕŕ<sup>o</sup> bv\_ ŕK (1840-1926) m<sup>o</sup> ŕv`K  
Kŕi |

iev`bv\_ etj b, Őth eqŕm fvi ZxZ wj vlZ iia Kvi qvQj vg tm eqŕmi tj Lv  
cKvŕthvM" nŕZB cvŕi bv| fvi Zxi cŕŕ cŕŕ Avgvi evj "jxj vi AŕbK j 3/4v Qvci

<sup>1</sup> iev`bv\_ VvKž, Rieb<sup>o</sup> Z, (cKvŕKvj -1421, XvKv, Aemi), c., 94

<sup>2</sup> cŕ<sup>o</sup> B, c., 102

Kvij i Kviy gvq Av¼Z nBqv AvtQ| †Kej gvĤ KvĖv tj Lvi Rb" j ¾v bñ-D×Z  
Avebq, A™Z AvuZkh" I mvo† KviġZvi Rb" j ¾v| hvnv vj uLqvQj vg Zivni  
Avakvstki Rb" j ¾v teva nq eŦU, †KŠ' ZLb gþbi gþa" th-GKUV Drmġni veĶvi  
mĀvi Z nBqvQj vġōqB Zivni gj" mvgvb" bñ| tm Kvj Uv †Zv fž Kvi evi B Kvj  
eŦU- †KŠ' vekġm Kvi evi, Avkv Kvi evi, Dj m Kvi evi I mgq tmB evj "Kvj | Ő  
fMzix vřtg GKU KveZv Ges BD†ivc cĖmxi cĤ vřtg KtqKU cĤ i ex`bv\_ j Ūtb  
\_vKvKvj xb fvi Zx cĤ Kivq cĶvġZ nq| i ex`bv\_ th cĤ mġntZ"i Rb" GZ veL'vZ  
Zvi mĤcvZ GfiteB| BD†ivc cĖmxi cĤ vejvZ I Bstir RvġZ mġú†K<sup>©</sup>i ex`bv\_  
th gšĖ" Ki†Zb, mġúv`K vġ†R>`bv\_ cv`UxKivq Zvi mgvřj vPbv Ki†Zb| cĤi  
i ex`bv\_ Avevi I Zvi Reve vj †L cvvřZb| Gfite mġúv`†Ki mř\_ řj Lbxi gva"řg  
hvř ZK<sup>©</sup>ř řq †KQz b DEi KvUvKvU Pj vQj |  
gvĤ vek eQi eqtm fMġ`q cĶvġZ nřj v| vej vřZ Gi i Pbv Avi†nřj I †kl nřj v  
ř`řk| řj vřK eBvU ř`Lj, coj, gRj | Kx thb Kx bvB, Kx thb nvi řqřQ, Kx thb bv  
cvBřj Rieb e`Ķnřq hvře, Kvgbv-evmbv, Avkv-Avkv·yvRvbZ gb D`vmx Ggb GKUV  
fve gb gvřS řLj v Kři teovřZ j vMj | GB eB cĶvřki ci hvK gñřj, QvĤ gñřj,  
i ex`bv\_ i bvg cřo řMj | vZvb evs vi Őřkvj Ő nřj b-Zvi řKk, Zvi tek, Zvi Pkgv  
meB AbřZ. nřZ j vMj | AvKvřk-evZřtm GKU K\_vB mřj nix „Āb Kři řřm  
teovřZ j vMj - Ői veveřy i Kvře" Gřj v bZb Q` , D`vmfve|<sup>2</sup>  
1288 e½řřā mŪvmsMxZ cĶvġZ nřj v| G mgq i ex`bv\_ fvi Zx-řZ vevea cĤ½ I  
eDVvKřvbi nvU vj LřQb| GB mŪvmsMxřZB cŪg Zvi vġřRi mřj dřU Dřv| veřkl  
gvaly<sup>©</sup> I j vřj řZ"i Kvřř mŪvmsMxZ i ex`a mřv mřři GK bZbřZi thvM Kři | GřZ  
Gřj vřgřj v Qř` i AmġúY<sup>©</sup>cĶvġ I fveřZvi evovevmo \_vKřj I Zv Kvř I Abři Y-  
Abři Y bq, GKvřřvR`ř kġhř AjřqP>`a mi Kvř I mvi`vPiY vġĤ mskvřj Z cŪřb  
Kve"msMġ<sup>3</sup> i ex`bv\_ veřkl AvMġ I AbřvřMi mř\_ cořZb| hv` I ġv vj vġvĶř  
cŪřb Kve" fvlv tevSv i ex`bv\_ i cřř tgřřUI mnR vQj bv, G Kvřř Gi cŪZ  
AvMġni gvĤvUv GKUZtevk vQj | gvřři thgb mřřQi exřRi gþa" th-cŪQbeA¼ž

<sup>1</sup> i ex`bv\_ vřKž, RiebřřZ, (cĶvġKvj -1421, XvKv, Aemi), c., 104

<sup>2</sup> LřM>`bv\_ Přřvra"řq, i ex`K\_v, (cĶvġKvj -1422, Kvj KvZv, RqkŪ cřřKvj q), c., 171

<sup>3</sup> ŐcŪřb Kve" msMġ Ő fvi Zx, kŪeY, fř`a 1288; ve"řvřZi cĤi vġóŪ; fvi Zx, Kvřř 1288|

j k v i q Z A v i g n u i b x t P t h - i n m " A b v i e ® Z . Z v R i v i G K v š t k š Z n j \_ v t k t Z g b  
 c ō P x b c ` K Z f ` i i P b v i u b t q K i e i f v e b U v l G i e " w Z μ g u Q j b v | Z v B Á v b i R Á v m v i  
 D " Q i t m K i w b A a " e m t q i g v a " t g A R i v b v i n t m " i R v j D t a s y P b K i v i g v b t m A c w i u P Z  
 G B c ō P x b m v n t Z " i i Z e f v i v t i i A Z t j n v i i t q t M t j b | G K u U - A v a u K v e " i Z e t P v t L  
 c o t e G B A v k v B Z i t K m v n t Z " i G B ` M g f i v t i c ō e t k A b g ō n Y Z K i j | G K c h t q  
 K i e t K I G R v Z i q i n t m " i A v e i t Y A v e Z K t i c K v t k i e i m b v t c t q e m j |  
 A y q e v e j y K v t Q i e x ` b v \_ B u Z c t e © B s t i R e j K - K i e P i v U U f b i ( 1 7 5 2 - 7 0 ) e Y ō v  
 i t b t Q b | t h c ō P x b K i e t ` i G g b b K j K t i K i e Z v i j L t Z b Z v t Z t e v S v i t K v t b v t R v  
 u Q j b v t h G U v P i v U U f b i i P b v b q | G e v i i e x ` b v \_ u Ō Z x q P i v U U ō n e v i t P ó v q c ō Ě  
 n t j b | G K i v b i e x ` b v \_ Z u i c e f j u L Z e Ū v t k e j t j b , ō m g v t R i j v B t e i i L v t Z  
 L v t Z e Ū K v t j i G K i u R x Y © c u c v l q v u M q v t Q , Z v n v n B t Z f v b y n s n - b i g K t K v t b v  
 c ō P x b K i e i c ` K v i c K v i q v A v i b q v u Q | ō<sup>1</sup>  
 G B e t j i e x ` b v \_ Z v t K K i e Z v , t j v c t o t k v b v t j b | K i e Z v , t j v i t b u Z i b G Z U v B  
 u e P i j Z n t q D V t j b t h u b t R B e t j t d j t j b , ō G c u A v g v i u b Z v š B P v B | G g b K i e Z v  
 u e " v c i u Z ( A b s y n b K 1 3 7 4 - 1 4 6 0 ) - P Ō x ` v t m i n v Z u ` q v e m n i n B t Z c v i i Z b v | A v i g  
 c ō P x b K i e " m s M ō n Q u i c e v i R b " B n v A y q e v e t K u e | ō<sup>2</sup>  
 K \_ v , t j v e j v i c t i G e v i i e x ` b v \_ u b t R i t j L v L v Z v u t e i K t i e Ū t k c ō v Y u t j b G  
 t j L v u b Ō q B u e " v c i u Z u K s e v P Ō x ` v t m i n v Z u t q t e i n t Z c v t i b v | K v i Y G t h Z u i B  
 t j L v | e Ū Z Z L b G K U z 3 / 4 v t c t q M a t i n t q e j j , u b Z v š g ` n q i b |  
 f v b y n s n V i K z i i c ` v e i j h L b f v i Z x - t Z t e i n u Q j W ± i u b u k K v š P t A v c v a " v q ( 1 8 5 2 -  
 1 9 1 0 ) Z L b R v g u b t Z A e - v b K i u Q t j b | B D t i v c x q m v n t Z " i m v t \_ G t ` k x q  
 M x v Z K v t e " i Z j y b v K t i u Z i b G K L v b v P u e B u j t L t Q b | A v i G M ō S L m b i K v i t Y B u Z i b  
 W ± i D c v i a t c t q t Q b | c ō P x b c ` K Z f t c u Z i b f v b y n s n t K t h u e i j m a s y b u t q t Q b Z v  
 A v a n b K K v t j i t K v t b v K i e i f v t M " G Z m n t R t R v t U b v | f v b y n s n V i K z i i c ` v e i j I  
 c ō f v Z m s M x Z c K v t k i g v a " t g e v s j v m v n Z " b e Q t ` b e f i t e m g y a j n t q D V j | u c i b -  
 e u Ě m g v t j v P K ` j e v s j v m v n t Z " D b i e s k k Z i v a x i b ` ` j y j i e x ` b v t \_ i A v i e f t e t K  
 v f v i e K f i t e t g t b u b t Z c v i t j b b v , Z v B u n s m t u g t b v f i e u b t q G f i t e B e j t j b ,

<sup>1</sup> i e x ` b v \_ V i k z , R i e b a s y Z , ( c K v k K v j - 1 4 2 1 , X i K v , A e m i ) , c . , 9 5  
<sup>2</sup> c ō \_ B , c . , 9 5

ŌGme A-úó, fvlv tevsv hrv bv- G Pwj te bv- G Kve" bq- ŌKvme"Ō|Ō<sup>1</sup> A\_P GB Kvte"  
e"eüz mgÿq kã eisjv fvlvi, GKUZL<sup>2</sup> t<sup>3</sup> L<sup>3</sup> meB Abvqv<sup>3</sup>m Avf<sup>3</sup>av<sup>3</sup>b cvl qv  
thZ| «KŠ' cikŌKvZi mgv<sup>3</sup>tj vPK`j Zvi I cŌqvRb g<sup>3</sup>tb Ki<sup>3</sup>tj b bv|

### **«cŌbv\_ tm<sup>3</sup>bi ms-úk<sup>3</sup>jvf**

«ejvZ «d<sup>3</sup>ti i ex`bv\_ cŌ`vZ mvinZ" mgv<sup>3</sup>tj vPK I Kve «cŌbv\_ tm<sup>3</sup>bi (1854-1916)  
ms-úk<sup>3</sup>jvf Kivi tmŠf<sup>3</sup>vM" nq| BD<sup>3</sup>tivcxq mvin<sup>3</sup>tZ" KZve`" «cŌbv\_ tmb-hui  
«ek<sup>3</sup>mvin<sup>3</sup>tZ"i me «eL`vZ MŠcŌYZv<sup>3</sup>t`i eBl AaxZ «Qj | hLb fM<sup>3</sup>«i`q cŌKvikZ ntjv-  
«Zvb i ex`bv<sup>3</sup>\_i mvin<sup>3</sup>tZ"K K`vii qvi «btq fvebvq cto tM<sup>3</sup>tj b, Avevi hLb mÜ`vmsMxZ  
cŌKvikZ ntjv-Zui G fvebv mvd<sup>3</sup>tj`i evZ<sup>3</sup>«btq i ex`<sup>3</sup>cÿcvZx ntjv «KŠ' cikŌKvZi  
mgv<sup>3</sup>tj vPK`j Zvic<sup>3</sup>til bxie iBj bv| Zv<sup>3</sup>t`i evnm Pj<sup>3</sup>tZB \_vKj | i«ei  
fvlvq,ŌKve"mgv<sup>3</sup>tj vPK<sup>3</sup>t`i g<sup>3</sup>ta" Avgvi m<sup>3</sup>†Ü GB GKUv ie Dv<sup>3</sup>W<sup>3</sup>tZvQj th, Avng fvl<sup>3</sup>v-  
fvl<sup>3</sup>v Q` I Av<sup>3</sup>†av Av<sup>3</sup>†av fvlvi Kve| mg`B Avgvi tav<sup>3</sup>qv- tav<sup>3</sup>qv, Qvqv Qvqv|<sup>3</sup>

«cŌbv\_ tmbB cŌg i ex`bv\_†K BD<sup>3</sup>tivcxq mvin<sup>3</sup>tZ"i fveiv<sup>3</sup>tR" «PiY Kivi th g<sup>3</sup>Š;  
D<sup>3</sup>4meZ K<sup>3</sup>tib tmB tPZbv<sup>3</sup>tK e<sup>3</sup>tK aviY K<sup>3</sup>ti «Pi<sup>3</sup>«bB «ek<sup>3</sup>mvin<sup>3</sup>tZ" m<sup>3</sup>†K<sup>3</sup>mRvM `«  
ivL<sup>3</sup>tZb| m`cŌKvikZ tKv<sup>3</sup>tv eBB Zui tPvL Gvotq thZ bv|

Zte Av<sup>3</sup>†Zvl tPŠajx (1860-1924) I tj v<sup>3</sup>tKb cvij tZi<sup>3</sup> cŌveI i ex`bv<sup>3</sup>\_i I ci Kg  
«Qj bv| «KŠ' «cŌbv<sup>3</sup>\_i cŌve mev<sup>3</sup>B†K Qvotq «M<sup>3</sup>tqvQj | AvPv<sup>3</sup>«RM`†ki m<sup>3</sup>v<sup>3</sup>-  
i ex`bv<sup>3</sup>\_i tPbvRv<sup>3</sup>bv tmB Aí eqm t<sup>3</sup>†KB ZLb ntZB Df<sup>3</sup>tqi g<sup>3</sup>v†S GKUv eÜ<sup>3</sup>zZi  
fve P<sup>3</sup>tj Av<sup>3</sup>m†Q, Zv<sup>3</sup>tZ KL<sup>3</sup>tv «Pi a†i bvB| G «Áv<sup>3</sup>vb†Ki mvin<sup>3</sup>tP Kvi†Y fveK<sup>3</sup>Zvi  
Av<sup>3</sup>Wk<sup>3</sup>th" «PiY K<sup>3</sup>ti I «btR<sup>3</sup>tK µgk mshZ ivL<sup>3</sup>tZ tcti†Qb| cŌKvZi Avb<sup>3</sup>†`i g<sup>3</sup>v†SI  
«cŌ FZzel<sup>3</sup>q ev`†ei te`bv f<sup>3</sup>tj hv<sup>3</sup>vb, c\_«vmx M<sup>3</sup>rviv gvb<sup>3</sup>tj i K\_v ZvB Zv†K  
fve†q†Q| Ōnvq c\_«vmx, nvq MvZnxb, nvq M<sup>3</sup>rviv|Ō DĒi Kv†j Kvei cvii YZ eq†m Zui  
f<sup>3</sup>«kl" eisjv Q<sup>3</sup>†`i hv`†i KveK<sup>3</sup>†f<sup>3</sup> m†Z`bv\_`†Ēi (1882-1922) «KŌzcŌveI  
Zui I ci c†ovQj | i ex`bv<sup>3</sup>\_i ZxÿeAŠ<sup>3</sup>†, tj vK<sup>3</sup>Pvii†v†ÁZv, NUbvi mib<sup>3</sup>tek Avi

<sup>1</sup> L†M<sup>3</sup>`bv\_ P†Av<sup>3</sup>va`vq , i ex`K\_v (cŌKvKvj -1422, Kvj KvZv, RqkŌcÿKvj q), c., 171

<sup>2</sup> i ex`bv\_ VvKž, Rv<sup>3</sup>«†Z, (cŌKvKvj -1421, XvKv, Aemi), c., 141

<sup>3</sup> t<sup>3</sup> v†K<sup>3</sup>bv\_ cvij Z (Rb<sup>3</sup>? 1865), Zvi K cvij tZi cÿ|

mgmiv netkd Y cūqvī cwi cvU Zvi Ace<sup>o</sup>mgvniči Avcb KueZj kv<sup>3</sup>i cwiPq Zui  
cūZūU eBtqB cvl qv hvq|

Zui Rxeḡb Ggb gvtḡ<sup>o</sup> ŷy Ačy<sup>v</sup> Ki tQ etj B nqḡZv fV<sup>M</sup>veavZv ḡqs mūKZ<sup>P</sup>ZūK  
g<sup>v</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup>R t<sub>1</sub>K t<sub>1</sub>k ḡdwi tQ Avbtj b| ḡcZv gn<sup>v</sup>ḡ<sup>o</sup>t<sup>e</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup> VvKḡ Zui G c<sup>ḡ</sup>veZ<sup>ḡ</sup>tK  
mūKZ<sup>P</sup> Av<sup>t</sup> k etj tḡḡb ḡbtj b| G hv<sup>ḡ</sup>vq ḡejvZ Mgḡbi c<sub>1</sub> AvitZvI tPšajxi  
m<sup>v</sup><sub>1</sub> Avjvc-cwiPq iex<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup>t<sub>1</sub>i Rb<sup>ḡ</sup> cig t<sup>ḡ</sup>šfV<sup>M</sup>| ḡejvZ nḡZ ḡd<sup>t</sup>i iex<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup>  
Kve<sup>v</sup>tj vPbvq Mfxi ḡḡḡḡ<sup>v</sup> ḡ<sup>v</sup>tj b| ZLb ḡv<sup>v</sup>mK cū<sup>ḡ</sup>Kv ḡḡḡḡ<sup>v</sup> th KvMR<sub>1</sub>tj vi  
evRv<sup>t</sup>i bvg ḡQj ZvivB iex<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup>t<sub>1</sub>i t<sub>1</sub>Lv c<sup>ḡ</sup>Kv<sup>t</sup>ki Rb<sup>ḡ</sup> ḡV<sup>ḡ</sup>tq ḡḡ<sup>t</sup> b| G mgḡq  
iex<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup> t<sup>ḡ</sup>v<sup>ḡ</sup>Z<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup>t<sub>1</sub>i m<sup>v</sup><sub>1</sub> GKB ḡ<sup>v</sup>t<sub>1</sub>ḡ<sup>v</sup> V<sup>ḡ</sup>KḡZb| t<sup>ḡ</sup>mB P<sup>ḡ</sup> b<sup>ḡ</sup>M<sup>t</sup>i i ḡg<sup>v</sup>ivb m<sup>v</sup><sub>1</sub>n<sup>t</sup>ei  
ev<sup>v</sup>vb t<sub>1</sub>K i i<sup>ḡ</sup>æK<sup>t</sup>i K<sup>v</sup>j KvZvi m<sup>ḡ</sup> i ḡ<sup>v</sup>U I ḡ<sup>v</sup>R<sup>ḡ</sup> s meL<sup>v</sup>t<sub>1</sub>bB iex<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup> t<sup>ḡ</sup>v<sup>ḡ</sup>Z<sup>ḡ</sup>v<sup>ḡ</sup> vi  
N<sup>v</sup>ḡḡ m<sup>v</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup> |

Gfiv<sup>t</sup>e ḡZūb ḡK<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup> b ḡ<sup>v</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup> m<sup>v</sup><sub>1</sub> Kv<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>t</sup>q ḡg<sup>v</sup>v<sup>ḡ</sup>B A<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>t</sup>i Kv<sup>t</sup>ivq<sup>v</sup> P<sup>t</sup>j t<sup>ḡ</sup>M<sup>t</sup>j b  
m<sup>t</sup>Z<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup>t<sub>1</sub>i ḡ<sup>v</sup>bKU| AvI ḡL<sup>v</sup>t<sub>1</sub>b e<sup>t</sup>mB ḡ<sup>v</sup>j L<sup>t</sup>j b c<sup>ḡ</sup>K<sup>ḡ</sup>Zi c<sup>ḡ</sup>Z<sup>t</sup>k<sup>v</sup>a| m<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup>msM<sup>ḡ</sup>Z, c<sup>ḡ</sup>f<sup>v</sup>Z  
msM<sup>ḡ</sup>Z t<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup> Rb<sup>ḡ</sup>, Av<sup>t</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup> i Rb<sup>ḡ</sup> K<sup>ḡ</sup>ei GK<sup>ḡ</sup>v A<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>t</sup>i Av<sup>t</sup>eM<sup>ḡ</sup>q Av<sup>ḡ</sup>K<sup>ḡ</sup> ev<sup>m</sup>b<sup>v</sup>B  
Av<sup>ḡ</sup>Z D<sup>ḡ</sup><sub>4</sub>j nḡq D<sup>t</sup>V K<sup>ḡ</sup>ei t<sub>1</sub>L<sup>v</sup>xi ḡ<sup>v</sup>t<sup>ḡ</sup>S| m<sup>m</sup>xḡl Z<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup> bq- Am<sup>x</sup>ḡl c<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup>bq-D<sup>f</sup>t<sup>ḡ</sup>i  
ḡḡ<sup>t</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup> c<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup> | f<sup>v</sup>t<sup>ḡ</sup>ei ḡ<sup>v</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup> ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup>q K<sup>ḡ</sup>ei te<sup>v</sup>ḡḡ<sup>ḡ</sup> f<sup>v</sup>ei<sup>v</sup>t<sup>ḡ</sup>R<sup>ḡ</sup> GK<sup>v</sup>B Q<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup>q t<sup>i</sup>t<sup>ḡ</sup>L<sup>t</sup>Q<sup>b</sup>|  
K<sup>ḡ</sup>ei m<sup>K</sup>j K<sup>ḡ</sup>e I K<sup>ḡ</sup>eiZvi D<sup>t</sup>i<sup>ḡ</sup> k<sup>ḡ</sup> Ggb etj B ḡḡḡ<sup>v</sup> nq| c<sup>ḡ</sup>K<sup>ḡ</sup>Zi c<sup>ḡ</sup>Z<sup>t</sup>k<sup>v</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup>ai ci Q<sup>ḡ</sup>ie  
I M<sup>v</sup>b (1290) Ges K<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ I t<sup>K</sup>vḡj (1292) c<sup>ḡ</sup>K<sup>ḡ</sup>t<sup>ḡ</sup>ki ci ōK<sup>ḡ</sup>ei<sup>ḡ</sup> ḡ<sup>v</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup>tj vP<sup>K</sup><sup>ḡ</sup> j t<sub>1</sub>tḡ  
t<sup>ḡ</sup>M<sup>j</sup> | t<sup>ḡ</sup>Kej ōi<sup>v</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup> G K<sup>ḡ</sup>e nḡZ ḡ<sup>v</sup>Av<sup>ḡ</sup>ni<sup>t</sup>Y e<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup> ḡ<sup>v</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup> ḡ<sup>t</sup>Zv ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup>v<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup> bMY<sup>ḡ</sup> ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup>  
te<sup>i</sup> K<sup>t</sup>i Gfiv<sup>t</sup>e en<sup>j</sup> Av<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup>q ej t<sub>1</sub>bt

D<sup>v</sup>ḡḡḡ<sup>t</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup> ti c<sup>v</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup> K<sup>ḡ</sup>ei  
t<sup>ḡ</sup>L<sup>v</sup>t<sub>1</sub>ci ḡ<sup>f</sup>Zi ḡ<sup>v</sup>K<sup>ḡ</sup> X<sup>v</sup>K<sup>v</sup>,  
t<sup>ḡ</sup>Zvi eK<sup>ḡ</sup>eK<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup> t<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup> t<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup>,  
ZvI K<sup>ḡ</sup>eiZ<sup>j</sup>i f<sup>v</sup>e ḡ<sup>v</sup>L<sup>v</sup>,  
ZvI Q<sup>v</sup>c<sup>v</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup>j M<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup>,  
bM<sup>ḡ</sup> ḡ<sup>j</sup> GK<sup>ḡ</sup> U<sup>v</sup>K<sup>v</sup>| Z<sup>v</sup>i<sup>c</sup>t<sup>ḡ</sup>i I iex<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup> ḡ<sup>c</sup>i<sup>b</sup>-e<sup>v</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup>-K<sup>ḡ</sup> G<sup>m</sup>e ḡ<sup>v</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup>tj vP<sup>b</sup>v i<sup>t</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup> ḡ<sup>b</sup>i<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup>  
ḡ<sup>v</sup>KḡZb|<sup>1</sup> hLb K<sup>ḡ</sup>ei ḡ<sup>v</sup>b<sup>m</sup>x c<sup>ḡ</sup>K<sup>ḡ</sup>v<sup>ḡ</sup>K<sup>ḡ</sup> nq ZLb K<sup>ḡ</sup>ei R<sup>x</sup>eḡb f<sup>v</sup>ei<sup>v</sup>t<sup>ḡ</sup>R<sup>ḡ</sup>i c<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup>v<sup>ḡ</sup> j<sup>v</sup>f  
K<sup>t</sup>i<sup>t</sup>Q| ḡ<sup>b</sup>t<sup>ḡ</sup>Ri Av<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup> i<sup>s</sup>-G m<sup>v</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup>R<sup>t</sup>q c<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup> A<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>t</sup>i t<sup>K</sup>v<sup>t</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup> ḡ<sup>v</sup>t<sub>1</sub>ḡ<sup>v</sup> K<sup>ḡ</sup>eiK<sup>ḡ</sup> ḡ<sup>b</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup> K<sup>t</sup>i

<sup>1</sup> L<sup>t</sup>M<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup> P<sup>t</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup>v<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup> , iex<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>v</sup> K<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ (c<sup>ḡ</sup>K<sup>ḡ</sup>v<sup>ḡ</sup>K<sup>ḡ</sup>v<sup>ḡ</sup> -1422, K<sup>v</sup>j KvZv, Rqk<sup>ḡ</sup> c<sup>ḡ</sup>ḡ<sup>ḡ</sup>K<sup>ḡ</sup>v<sup>ḡ</sup> q), c., 176  
40

bxite-ubfzZ w`bhvcb Kivi gvbtm uKQz b Kue MmRc:ji uQ:tb Ges tmLvtb GKU  
emol μq Ktib| gvbmx AwaKvsk KueZv Ges ōtMvjvcQnoŌ Mí MmRc:ji e:mb  
tj tLb| tm emouU Zvi fMtbq AtkvKbv\_ gLvcva`vqfK emer:mi Rb` `vb Kti  
Kj KvZvq vdti Avmtj b, KueKÄ Avi ntj v bv|

Kvj KvZvq Gtm uZvb MŌŪU¼ tivW ati Miai Mmo:Z tctkvqvi chšl`agtY tei nevi  
msKí Kti uQ:tb, weavZv Gevti I Zui G Avkv cY©Ki:tb bv, Ggb mgq Zui I ci  
Rug`vvi t`Lvi fvi coj |

Que I Mvb Ges Kuo I tKvg:tj i gvtS th evj K cwi Kvi Rb:ntj v Zv mtZ`>`bv: i `x  
kñh: v Ávb`vbw`bx t`ex<sup>1</sup> m:úv`bvq emoi tQvU tQvU tQ:tb tqtq` i iPbv Af`vm Mto  
tZvj vi Rb`B m:úv etj avi Yv Kiv nq| GB evj tK<sup>2</sup> i ex`bv\_ ōgk:Ō bvUK I ōi vRwŌ  
Dcb`vm, ōtnq:ij bvUKŌ,ŌagtY eFvšŌ I uKQz M` cŌÜ tj tLb| th uki mvin:Z`i  
AeZvi Yv i ex`bv\_ Ki:tb e½mvin:Z` Zv GtKev:ti B bZb| hv mvin:Z` bZb Avg`vnb  
ej:tj I tevanq GKUz tevk evj nte bv| GiB cwi YvZ vntmte Avgiv uki I uki  
tfvj vbv\_ Ges tm-tZ t`L:Z cvB| fvi Zx I evj K uKQ:kvj GKtĪ cKvtki cti AvZ  
Aíw tbi gta` evj K Qvcvtbv eÜ ntq tMj | fvi Zx mvabvq ifcvš:ti Z ntj v| Avi  
1298 e½vtā mvabv-i Rb:ntj v| hvi m:úv`K uQ:tb m:úv`bv\_ VvKz (1861-1929) |  
i ex`bv: i ávZúyiv etj>`bv\_ VvKz<sup>3</sup> cŌy h:kt` i KgRw:tk KvtR j vM:q mvabv  
Rqevt` GvM:q th:Z j vMj | i ex`bv: i tj Lbx I ci mvabv eúj vs:tk ubfP ntq  
coj | uZvb I ōmvabvqŌ M` cŌ`i Rv: Qmo:q w`tj b| mvabvq Zui iPbvi eúgvwĪK  
cKvk NtUB P:tj tQ|

mvguqK BstiuR gvmmK cwi Kvi ntZ mvi msKj b, weÁvbv:elqK ubDR, ivRbvxzi  
Av:tj vPbv, mgvRZš; Mš' mgvtj vPbv, Zui Agi m:úv tQvUMí I gvtm gvtm Kve` G me  
`evPĪgq iPbv vbtq mvabv cKvukZ nZ| GKB KvM:R Gfvte eúvea v:elq vj tL tKn  
th GKRb mvin:Z`K vntmte cŌZŌv j vf Ki:tZtQb Zv tevanq BDti v:cxq mvin:Z`tj:tĪ  
Lg GKUv tPvtL cto bv| G mgq Kuei eqm uQj gvĪ wĪk eQi | mvabvq Zui tj Lbx  
cKvtki ckvicvuk GKB mgq vnzv`x cwi Kvi mtZ` I Zui cwi Pq NtU| th tQvUM:t i

<sup>1</sup> Ávb`vbw`bx t`ex (1850-1941), mtZ`>`bv: i cZv: weevn 1859|

<sup>2</sup> evj K: cKvk %akv\_ 1292, m:úv`Kv Ávb`vbw`bx t`ex

<sup>3</sup> etj>`bv\_ VvKz (1870-99) t`te>`bv: i PZz`cŌy exti>`bv: i cŌy|

Rb" eisjvmvntZ" i ex`bv\_ tK mv\_ R `bv ejv nq Zvi iia GB mvabv I wZev`x  
cwiKv w`tq| GfvteB Zui cZfv `vaxb-weKvfk c`\_i mUvb tctq Avcb fzb `Zwi  
Kti wbj |<sup>1</sup> mvabv eU ntq hvevi eQti i ex`bv\_ Gi m`uv`K wQtb |

## L`wZgvb Kve i ex`bv\_

wZvb GLb j`acZö, Zui hk, Zui L`wZ meB tjv`Ki g`L g`L | mvinZ`RMtZ  
ew`gP`>`1 cti wZvbB GK`QÎ AvacwZ Zv tjv`K t`gb wbtq`Q | mvinZ` i Pbvq Zui  
KwZZj AmvaviY | Kve", Dcb`vm, bvUK, MxZ, bvU`inm", tQvUMí, i½im, cEÜ,  
mgv`tj vPbv me w`tKB Amvgvb" cZfvi mvy" enb Kti | Zui tj Lbx`útk`meB my`i,  
g`bvi g ü`q Krov AvKI`P cvWKtK w`tgvnZ Kti`Q | Ab" tKvb tj LK Zt` i tj Lbxi  
gv`S Ggb Kti Kve" m`v tXtj w`tZ cvti bwb | mvinZ` wZ`bZb wRvbm tctq evOvij i  
iKgvi Avb`i Abv`wZ m`p ntjv | be wPš`vavq i ex`bv\_ I gk\_j ntq tMtb |  
ew`gP`>`a (1838-94) m`útk`i ex`bv\_ tm K\_vUv etj wQtb AvR tmB GKB K\_v Zui  
m`útk`P mgvfvte c`hvR" ntjv | e½mvinZ` wZvb i\_ Ges c\_ `B m`p Kti`Qb |  
mvabv eU ntq hvevi ci i ex`bv\_ e½`k` (bech`q) bq eQi (1308-1316), fvi Zx  
22 el`ntZ 26 el` (1305-1309), fiv`vi (-`uk h`Mi `TgvimK cÎ, 1312) I  
ZÉ`emabx cwiKv (1833-1836: kKvā, 1318-1321), mgv`tj vPbv (1308),  
kviš`b`KZb (1326), Bst`i`R w`kfvizxi tKvqvUvij -I c`g msL`v (1330)  
cwiKv, tjv mg`q mg`q m`uv`bv Kti`b | GQvovl wbt`f` cwiKv, tjvi mv`\_ Zui Nwbö  
msw`k`Zv wQj - c`xc, c`v`mx I meR`cÎ | i ex`bv\_ hLb e½`k`bi bech`q m`uv`tbi  
KvR Avic`Kti`b G mgq Z`K c`f`v` ejvBP`u tMv`v`gx gnvktqi ms`útk`Avm`tZ  
nq | e½`k`bi c`d t`tL c`Kv`ki e`e`v Kivi fvi c`f`v` ejvBP`u tMv`v`gx gnvktqi  
I ciB b`-`wQj | th`-tKv`bv tjLv c`Kv`ki t`y`T Zvi gZvgZ wQj - tKv`bv cEÜ ev  
gZvgZ h`w Z`k`P mvin`th" h`y`i I ci c`ZwöZ Ki`tZ cviv bv hvq wKsev wPv`mn  
cZcb`Kiv bv hvq, Zv c`Kv`k Kiv D`PZ bq Ges tKv`bv D`x`Z. Astk h`w tKv`bv f`z  
\_v`K Zv ntj tmUv cwiKvi , i`zi Kj ¼ |

<sup>1</sup> L`M`bv\_ P`Avca`vq , i ex`K\_v (c`Kv`Kvj -1422, Kwj KvZv, Rqk`c`y`Kvj q), c., 179



Ziv Kuei ub`ri uQj bv| t`Lv thZ uzub tKvrbv`vb ntZ mU`vtej vq ev ivtZ vdti  
Gtm t`LtzB cFzv` ejvBPu tMv`vgr gnvkq Zui Rb` efm AvtQb| Kuei tj Lv  
m`uK`Zui mvt\_ Avtj vPbv bv Kti tj Lv cKvtki Avt`k t`qv hv`Q bv| AtbK mgq  
ga`iwi Aewa Zvi mvt\_ ZK`Kti evStq w`tz ntZv, cEtUi tKvrbv tKvrbv`vrb  
cwi eZB I cwi gvR` Kti D`Z Ask, tjv wuj tq Gici gy`Yi c`tyc tbqv ntZv|  
tMv`vgr gnvkqi mvt\_ Gfite Kuei AtbKw`b tKtUtQ| cAZ iPbvq GBfite cixyv  
w`tq Zui KueZj kw`i cwi c`Zv jvf Kti tQ| Gi ga` w`tq KueK cAZev`i DEi  
t`evi Rb` cAZ Kti ZjZ| Kue etj b th, tMv`vgr gnvkqi m`tY Zui iPbvi  
mZKZv euj cwi gvty ew`x tctqtQ|<sup>1</sup>

iev`bv\_ Kxfite wj Ltzb Zvi eY`vq Kue etj b, cKZ. ctj ZLb Avgvi mvabvB  
Pj uQj | tbsKvi I ci \_vKZvg| mt`th tj vK uQj, tm cAZ`n cAZ`I GKemU Wvj  
w`x Kwiqv Avgvi tUetj i I ci XvKv w`qv ivLqv hvBZ| Avgv tmB Wvj UKzLvBqv  
wj vLtz eimZvg; mg`w`b wj vLZvg| tKvrbv`jc vPEvetyc nBZ bv, Acivtn cuPuv vK  
mvto cuPuvi mgq LvBKZK j vP LvBZvg, Zuvvi ci evni OBR` tPqv`i kqb Kwi Zvg;  
tbsKv b`xi I ci Ak`sfvte Pij tz \_vKZ| GK sitting-G cA fzi Wvqwi, Mf,  
KueZv AbM` wj vLqv hvBZvg| Kwis`teva Kwi Zvg bv|<sup>2</sup>

A`ewa evsj vmmntZ`i GB GK I GKgvI e`vZvgx e`w`Zi; yYRb` Kue I msMxZ`ov  
iev`bv\_ VvKz cKvKZ tgSij K Kve`M`si msL`v 52| uzub cUq AvovB nvrvti i gtzv  
Mvb wj tLzQb| GQvov 13 uU Dcb`vm, 95 uU tQvUMf, 36 uU cEtU I M`M`S Ges 38  
uU bvUK wj tLzQb| fviZ, evOj v`k I kOj sKv Zui ivPZ Mvb Zv`i RvZxq msMxZ  
wntmte MhY Kti tQ| Zui mgM`vPw/cI Dwbk LzD cKvKZ ntqtQ| Zui ivPZ Mvb  
thgb iev`msMxZ wntmte`KwZ. AR` Kti tQ Zui bZ`%kj x iev`bZ` bvtg cwi vPZ|  
iev`bv`\_ i mgM`i Pvej x iev`i Pvej x bvtg 32 LzD cKvKZ ntqtQ|

---

<sup>1</sup> LtM`bv\_ P`vncva`vq, iev`K\_v (cKvkKvj -1422, Kvj KvZv, RqkO cyKvj q), c., 181

<sup>2</sup> cO`B, c., 179

# ZZxq Aa'vq

bvRe gvndzRi KtqKuU tQvUMtí i chj vPbv

## Avj -gġvng

### (المتهم - Aifh)

bvRe K\_vmvntZ'i GK Agimwó tQvUMí | Avj -gġvng Zu Kvj Rqx mwó Ggb GKU Mí thLvfb GKRB wbt`ġ tj vKtK Acivax mve`l Kiv ntqtQ| hvi Kvnub Gfvte GwMtq Pjt q- mvBtKj Pvj K Avqv` Avj -Rvdix tckvq GKRB avg`gvb e`emvqx| thLvfb tm `Nbvri wkKvi nq H GjvKvi eú Kl.tKi mıt\_ mewfbæKviev i tqtQ Zvi | tm Kxfvte tKb G`vKumWuU Kij Zvi mWK Kvi Y bv Rvbtj I Kl.tKiv Avj x gġv bvgK GKRBtK `vqx Kij | Ges `pZvi mıt\_ GK\_v Rvbj th, Zviv t` tLq Avj x gġvB G NUBv NuUqtQ| Avqv` Avj Rvdix UġKi ucQtbi GKUv iW aġi gġbi Avbt` Mvb MvBtZ MvBtZ webv cwi kġg QzU Pjt q| GgbwK UġKi mıt\_ cġZthvMZvq wbtRi `z Mvzi Dci wbtRB `viay Lvk ntjv| cKwzi jvj -bxj -meR KZwKQztcQtb tdtj mvgtb GwMtq Pjt q| mnmv GK weKU kã Gtj v Avj x gġvi Kvtb| t` Lj UġKi PvKv mvBtKj I Zvi AvtinvtK t\_Ztj w`tqtQ| Avi Avcb MvZtZ QzU cvj vj UġK WbFvi |

UġK WbFvıtK WvKtj I tm tKvfbv aġyc bv Kti wKB Mvvo Pvj tq `wó mxgvi evBti nvi tq tMj | Avj x gġv mvBtKj t\_tK `B wġvı `iZ; Mvvo \_vıgtq tbtg coj | ftq ftq NUBv`tj i wKUEZPntjv| Ggb GK `Nbv hv t` tL tm fxZ ntq coj | GKU Amvo kixi | Wvb evú kixti i cvtk Aek| gġLi Wvb Ask Qrov meB t\_Ztj w`tqtQ cġYnvZx UġK| cv `ġv QvBiOv c`vUmn mvBtKtj AvUġK SzqtQ| cPz i 3yi Y nt`Q| mvBtKj UvI cġq Pzgvı ntq tMtQ, evK AvtQ tKej tctWtj i GKvsk| AvnZ Avqv` Avj Rvdix GZ `z kġm wbt`Q th Zvi RLg nI qv ek I Vvbgv KiġQ| wek ev Zvi Kgtex eqtmi GB hġKi w`tK ZvKtq tkvtKi Qvqv eġK wbtq Avj x gġv fvetQ tm wK GB hġKtK MvvoZ Ztj UġKi ucQzavı qv Kiġe ? hvZ ZvtK tKvfbv tPKtctv` wMtq aiv hvq|

Gme tftē MvvoZ DVtZ hvte Ggb mgq AġbK Avı qvR i bZ tġ | Kviv thb wPrKvi KiġQ Avi ejtQ-`wvı, GKUz boġe bv| tcQb wdtıB t`LtZ tġ Zviv

cvtki meR tÿZ t\_#K QzU Avmv KIK`j | NUbvi AvKw`SKZvq Zvi eK tKtc DVj ,  
I iv cv\_i Qzo gvite GB ftq tm Mmo#ZI DVj bv| GB cwiw`tZ tm Kx Ki te eStZ  
bv tcti AvPgKv e`vM t\_#K uc`lj tei Kij | uc`lj t`tL gvi gL v RbZv VvDv ntq  
tMj | KIK`i ga` t\_#K GKRB etj DVj :

Zug uK Avgv` i tgti tdj tZ Pvl ? thgb Kti GB tj vKuv`K tgti tdtj Q|

-Avg H tj vKuv`K gvni ub| ug` tZvgiv Avgvq t`vlv`ivc KiQ| Avg Zv`K `ukP  
Kvi ub| GKwU U`K Zv`K uc`l w`tqQ|

U`K bq, tZvgvi Mmo, ZugB I`K uc`l tgti Q|

-tZvgiv uKQB t`Lub|

cEj `yöšl Avi RYsvtgjvi gta` t`vRtLi AvMaeZvi Dci w`tq etq Ptj tQ| tm  
uKQzB tevSvtZ cvi tQ bv tm Acivax bq| `t t\_#K `tLv Mmo Avm`Z t`Lv tMj |  
GKwU cvj tki, Ab`uU G`v`y Y| Avqv` Avj Rvdix`K NUbv`j t\_#K Ztj nvmcvZvtj  
ubtq hvI qv ntj v|

cvj k Avdmvi KIK`j`K Avj x ggyvi t\_#K `ti mwi tq w`tj v| Avj x ggyv ubtR`K  
Avf`thvM t\_#K gy` Ki tZ hv` t`Lvj : Avg hv` G`vKwmtWu Ki Zvg, Zvntj uK  
GLv`b `wotq \_vKZvg ? VvDv Mj vq cvj k Avdmvi ejj , Avcub fq Ktibub| ZvB  
cvj v`bvi c`qvRbxqZvl Abf`e Ktibub| KIK`j A`cyv Ki tZ j vMj | Kx nq Zv  
t`Lvi Rb`| Avdmv`i i uKtg Zviv gvUtZ nUzgt`o etm tMj | tbvU vj tL Avdmvi  
ubvj Bfiv`e tPqv`i etm iBj | tPqv`i etm Ggb kvšfiv`e cvl Kv cotZ j vMj thb Zvi  
Avi tKv`bv KvR tbB|

Avj x ggyv ubtR`K `vfw`eK ivLvi PvBj hv`Z tKv`bvfv`teB Avdmv`i i m`n bv-nq  
Avj x ggyvB G KvR Kti tQ| Avj x ggyv eStZ cvij AvnZ e`w`B GLb Zvi GKgvl  
fimv| tKej tmB ej tZ cvi te Avj x ggyv t`vlx uK bv|

Avj x ggyv cvj k Avdmv`i i Kv`Q Rvb`Z PvBj Avqv` Avj Rvdix tKvb Ae`vq AvtQb|  
cvj k Avdmvi Zv`Z wei` n`q DVj | tm ejj , G e`vcv`i Avcbv`K tKv`bv c`k`eKi tZ  
nte bv| tKv`bv Lei Avm`j B Avcbv`K Rvbv`bvr nte| `xN`mgq cvi Kti cvj k Avdmvi  
uKQzvb` R t`evi Rb` cvj k`i WvKj | uK tmB gytZ`us us k`ã tUvj tdiv tetR  
DVj | tUvj tdivbi I c`šl K\_v t`jv i`tb Avj x ggyvi w`tK ZvKvj | Avdmv`i i tPv`L  
v`Rtqi nvm| K\_v tk`l tUvj tdiv ti`L ejj ,

-Avak RLg nI qvi Kvi`Y Avqv` Avj Rvdix gvi v tM`Q|

## RivbZ Avj -AvZdvj

(جنّة الأطفال - مكيي - م)

G Mfiri tK`iq PmiT i tqfQ GKUJ tQvE iki | Zvi mncvix br`xqv | Zviv GKB -zj  
cto | memgq GKmit\_ \_vtK | tKej atgP Kfm Zviv XzK Ab` Kvgivq | tQvE iki i  
gtb ckaRvM G ubtq | tm GtKi ci GK ckaKi tZ \_vtK evertK | ever ZvtK tevSvtZ  
Pvq GUV atgP Kvm | tZvgvi agGKUV AvI br`xqvi agAvtiKUV | Zvg gvyj gvb, tm  
uLbvb | GB Revte gb fti br | tm cvEv ckaKti Zvntj Avig gvyj gvb nj vg tKb ? I  
ej tZ Pvq, In! etSvQ, I i ever Pkgv cti etj | ever etj - t`L gv, Pkgvi mit\_ atgP  
tKvibv m`uK`bB | iki gb Gaitbi DEti uKozZB mso ntZ cvti br |  
tm RivbZ Pvq gvyj gvb fvtjv, bvik uLbvb | ever etj, DfqUVB fvtjv | iki ntj I tm  
estZ cvti ever ZvtK Gnotq hv`Q | Zvi avi Yv, fvtjv tKej GKUB ntZ cvti | tQvE  
tgtq ejj, ever, DfqB hv` fvtjv nq Zvntj Avig uLbvb atgP KvR Kie | hv`Z Avig  
Avi br`xqv memgq cikvcvk \_vtZ cvti |  
everi ZLb cEj AvciE, G ntZ cvti br | Kvi Y, cZ`K tQtj tgtqK uK ever-gvi  
gtZv ntZ nq | thnZzAvig gvyj gvb tmnZzZvg | gvyj gvb | ever gy` gtb gvb |  
atgP e`vcti mveavbxl bq, AvabK Avtbi vectyI bq | ever estZ cvij, GUV  
ubDq AvabK cikytYi cve | ever ejj, t`L, agGKUVi ci GKUV GtmQ |  
Bmj vg mevi cti GtmQ | thUv cti GtmQ, tZvgvi DvPZ tmUv Avkto aiv |  
ZLb tgtq ejj, br`xqvi agZvntj cjtbr | Avig uK br`xqvK etj t`te Zvi agG  
Lvvc, Avgvi agfvjtjv, Kvi Y Avgvi agbZb | ever tgtqK \_vgtq w`tq ejj,  
cZ`K agB myi, gvyj gvb | Avj ni Bev`Z Kti, uLbvb | Avj ni Bev`Z Kti |  
tQvE tgtqUV Pvq br`xqvK ubtq GKB Kvgivq Bev`Z Kitz | thnZzZviv GKB  
Avj ni Bev`Z Kti |  
tm Avj ni, Zvi Av`Z; ygZv, Ae`vb m`uK`RivbZ Pvq | tm ckaKti, uZvb th  
Avmgvrb Zv Krfvte Rivj vg ? GtKi ci GK cka bZ i bZ everi `ahPvZ NtU |  
Avj ni th Dcti AvtQb Zv tgtqUV tgtb ubtZ cvij br, Kvi Y br`xqv ZvtK etj tQ uZvb  
Rvgtb \_vtKb | hv` I ever ZvtK estqQ Avj ni thnZzmeq ygZvi Avakvix tmnZz  
me RvqMvq uZvb itqtQb | br`xqv ZvtK etj tQ tvvtKiv ZvtK tgti tdtj tQ | ever  
ejj, gvgwY, Zv KLtbr ntZ cvti br | Avj ni RvmeZ, ZvtK tKD gvtZ cvti br | Avi

cvi tel bv | tm ckeKti, Zvi gZ `v`vK vbtq | tqtqU ejj, ešov Avi Amý' ntj  
gvby hv` gti Zvntj ZvgI tZv ešov Avi Amý', Zvg giQ bv tKb ? ZryYvr evel  
DEi w`tj b, Avgiv ZLb gie hLb Avj m Avgv` i gvi teb |  
Zvntj gZzKx gRv! bv gv, gZztKv bv gRvi w el q bq |  
Zvntj thlv gRv bq Avj m tmlv tKb Kiteb ? evel, Avng hLb ejj vg, Zvg gti hvte,  
gv ZLb Avgv`K agKvtj b tKb ?  
KviY, hvi gZznq tm `vqv t`K P`j hvq | Avj m Zv`K Avi wlvitq t`b bv |  
AeS tqtqUi gly w`tq K\_v tei`ZB j vMj, wZvb vbR B"Qvq GLvb Avgv` i vbtq  
Av`mb | Avevi Zvi B B"Qvq GLvb t`K vbtq hvb, tKb evel ?  
evel tqtqU`K tevSv`Z Pvb, thb Avgiv cv`ex t`K P`j hvevi Av`M wKQyfv`j v Kvr  
Kti hvB | evel, tqtqi GiKg c`ke DEi w`tZ w`tZ Kvš' ntq ctotQb | Zvi `vvg  
Avi cQ` n`"Q bv Zvi | iayckeAvi cke DEi ,tjv mWK, bv f`z Zvi wetePbv bv  
KtiB Reve w`tq P`j tQb evel |  
tqtqU e`j DVj, Avng memgq bv`xqvi mvt`\_vKe | GgbwK atgP Kv`ml | GZme  
tkvbrv ci gv ejj, Zvg hLb eo nte ZLb vbtRi Avb w`tq hv` i Oviv eS`tZ cvi te  
tkvblv fv`j v Avi tkvblv gv` |

## nwhv Avj -Kib

### (هذا القرن - GB kZvāxi tcġ)

civkv I Zvi ḡ tbcvq Pz nṯq Nṯg Av"Qbḡ Zvṯ i ṯbtq MvmoU cūmvṯ i wFZi XzK  
AvacivK P° i tgṯi tṯg tMj eviṯ vi mvgṯb| gv\_vUv Mvmoi GK tKvṯY , tR cṯi cṯi  
NṯṯQ civkvi ḡ| t`n thb vekvj mvgvK Rxe| ciṯb g`v , tek `jṯQ kixiUv|  
GṯUvṯmṯUv ṯgṯ cwiwZ ḡxi bMævūṯZ gv\_v Sṯṯ ṯq w`j civkv| ḡxi civk tm ṯbZvšB  
GKUv ev"Pr tQṯj i gṯZv| \_vKvi gṯa" AṯQ tKej ṯgvUv k³ GK tRvov tMṯd| GQvov  
tm tZv nvj Kv-cvZj v teṯU aiṯbi |

emio tcṯQvṯbvi K\_v Pvj K Zvṯ i Rvṯbtq w`j | Avi ejj , Avcbviv bvgṯ, veQvbrq ṯMṯq  
iṯq coly| civkv Zvi jvj `ṯUv tPvL Ljṯ, evBṯi i nvj Kv Avṯj vṯZ tPvL Lṯj ivLṯZ  
Kó nṯ"Q Zvi | civkv tPvL eṯR Pvj KṯK ejj , nvmvb, Zṯṯ hvl , Avgiv GLvṯbB Nṯve|  
mKvṯj hLb `vṯivqvb, PvKṯi iv t`Lṯe Avcbviv MvmoṯZ Nṯṯ"Qb ZLb e`vcriUv tek  
evṯR gṯb nṯe| Pvj ṯKi K\_vq civkv Zvi ḡxi K\_v ivLṯZ civj bv| civkvi ḡ DVṯZ  
tPóv Kij | gṯb nṯ"Q kixiUv ZvṯK ṯbtq t`vj bvi gṯZv `jṯQ| civkvi ḡxi kixi tKṯc  
DVj | tm KvZ nṯq coṯZ tMṯj tmvRv nṯq emvi Rb" GKUv ṯKQzAvKṯo aiṯZ ṯMṯq  
aij civkvi vekvj tMṯd tRvov| tm GZ k³ Kṯi aij thb Dcṯo hṯe| e`\_v tctq  
nvmṯZ nvmṯZ civkv ejj , Qvo Avgvi tMṯd, GUv ṯK Zṯṯ t`vj bvi iṯk gṯb Kṯi Q ?

hqbe nvbg, ṯṯŠK ṯevanq GKUṯeṯK B Kṯi tdṯj Q|

GQvov Avgvi Avi KxB-ev Kivi ṯQj ? bvi x-cjṯd mevB thfṯe Lvṯ"Q|

civkv ejj , Avṯṯ tZv g` tLṯZ Af`-`| Avṯṯ GKivṯZ t`vKvṯbi me g` tLṯq tdj ṯZ  
cvi e| Zvntj AvR ūk nvmiṯq tdj ṯj tKb ? Zv tZvgvi Rb" | hLb J e`gvk ṯṯqUv  
Avgvi w`ṯK ZvṯKṯq ejj , Avj ṯn ing Kṯiv Beṯnxg civkvi Dci | tm tZv GKvavṯi  
`ṯṯx I ci ṯkyK| AvZw\_iv mevB nvmiṯQj , ZṯṯI Zvṯ i mvṯ\_ nvmiṯQṯj |

Dciv`Z mevB tZvgvi tQvU kixi t`ṯL Avṯh°nṯ"Qj | hLb ṯcṯṯ dvZnx teK tZvgvi  
tQvU kixṯi i w`ṯK BwṯZ Kṯi ejj , tZvgvi vekvj tMṯd tRvovB bvmK tZvgvi kixi eo  
nṯZ w`ṯ"Q bv| GK\_v iṯb GṯKi ci GK mevB tZv tnv tnv Kṯi tnṯm DVj , Avṯṯ mevi  
mvṯ\_ Zvj ṯṯṯṯ ṯq nvmj ṯg|

ṯZvgvi nvmi KviY Zṯṯ ṯbtRB| tZvgvi nvj Kv-cvZj v kixṯi i Zṯṯbrq tMṯdUv AṯbK  
fvvi I ṯgvUv| tek KṯqKevi tPṯqṯQ Zṯṯ hLb Nṯṯṯq \_vK ZLb tZvgvi tMṯdUv tKṯU

t`e| uKŠ msmvi fv½vi f¼q Zv Kviub| ZvQvov tMæd bv \_vKtj tZvgv¼K GZ evPvi  
 g¼Zv jvMte th, AvBbZ hvi ve¼qi eqm nqub|  
 cvkvI ejj, tZvgvi A`vfveK tgvUv kixiUv tjv¼Ki nvmi KviY| t`Lub tZvgvi  
 evÜext`i Zviv KZ w`g| i vRqv nrbg GKgvÎ Avjv`v| cvkvi `x ejj, ZvgB GRb`  
 `vqx| Miai tMvKZ tZvgvi bvk Lg c0>`| w`g uclMvi tZvgvi fv¼jv jv¼M bv| Avi  
 GLb tZvgvi t`vl `xKvi KiQ bv| gšx gnvk¼qi `fve tZv GKUx e`j ntjv bv|  
 ub¼Ri K\_v¼K KZ mn¼R f¼j tMj |  
 nVv c¼mvt`i tM¼Ui evB¼i t\_¼K Avmv veKU AvI qv¼R `vgx-`xi Gai¼bi msjvc Avi  
 mvg¼b G\_¼jv bv| GKUv Qvqv¼Z`cvkvi c¼mvt`i cv¼Pj t\_¼K jv¼d¼q K¼qK nvZ `¼i  
 vM¼q coj | mvg¼b cv¼k t`¼LB tm e¼m coj | cv¼k `¼Z Zvi nvZ a¼i veKU  
 AvI qv¼R ejj, kqZv¼bi evPv g¼b K¼i uQm kn¼i AvBbKvbly ¼bB ?  
 m½i tcvkvK c¼i uNZ h¼KvU eveytMv¼Qi, Zvi tPnivq mij Zv Avi fv¼Zi Qvc tR¼M  
 DVj, cv¼k Zv¼K ejj, g¼b nq ci¼bi R`v¼KUv Qvov Avi uKQzPv¼ Ki¼Z c¼i mub|  
 h¼KvU f¼q K¼c¼Z K¼c¼Z ejj, Avmtj Avng tPvi bB|  
 Zvntj Zvg uK G c¼mvt` teov¼Z G¼m¼Qj ? h¼KvU Rv¼v¼jv tm GB c¼mvt`i B tjvK|  
 ZLb cv¼k ejj, ubtm¼`tn Avcub cvkvi tQ¼j, Avi GB iv¼Z t`lqv t\_¼K jv¼d¼q  
 c¼o kviv¼K e`vqv¼ Ki¼Qb| bv bv Avmtj Zv bq, ZvovZvno tei n¼Z tP¼qv¼jv¼|  
 Zvov¼tov bv Ki¼j bq, Mvno Qvovi mgq n¼q tM¼Q| ZvB e¼j c¼mvt`i uK `iRv uQj  
 bv ? cv¼k Zvgvkv¼ m¼i ejj, Avi uKQz b ci nq¼Zv Avgiv t`L¼ev tjv¼Kiv `¼Z tei  
 nevi Rb`- Pvi Zjv t\_¼K jv¼d¼q co¼Q| KviY vmmw w`¼q b¼gvi mgq Zv`i n¼e bv|  
 h¼KvU¼K ub¼q cv¼k tRiv cv¼v tRiv Avi `v¼ivqv¼-W¼Bfv¼i i n¼tMv¼j i v¼i i  
 ub`¼Zv t¼t¼ cvkvi KÉ`¼ t¼t¼m G¼jv- nvmub, tK lLvb ? m¼vi c¼mvt`i t`qv¼  
 Uc¼K cv¼v¼bvi mgq GB tPviUv aiv c¼o¼Q| cvkv Mvno t\_¼K t¼tg `v¼j |  
 nivq! nivq! j¼jy¼Zv evmvq GKv uQj | GK\_v e¼j B cvkv t¼Z¼i i `iRvi w`¼K t`što  
 tMj | t¼Qb t¼Qb Uj¼Z Uj¼Z Zvi `xI | cvkv uPrKvi w`¼q WvKj j¼jy`iRv L¼j  
 tMj | i`å m½i N¼gi tcvkvK c¼i uNZv GK ifcmx igYx `v¼q Av¼Q| uK¼i co¼Q  
 Zvi D¼¼j ifc| AÜKv¼i m¼h¼ Av¼jvi b¼vq S¼g¼j Ki¼Q| cvkv ejj, c¼mvt`i t`qv¼  
 Uc¼K cv¼v¼bvi mgq GKUv tPvi aiv co¼Q| j¼jy e¼k tK¼c DVj, K¼v Mjvq ejj,  
 tPvi!

mevB Rtov ntv GK RvqMvq| j jyy tmLvfb| h9KwU gly t`tL j jyyPgK DVj | teto  
tmj ü`ú`b| tm fta gly Nnyta wbj |  
civkK mtab Kti cyj k ejj , m'vi , Avmvgx etj tQ G bmk Avcivri emoi tjvK|  
Gevi civk fwi KÉ h9KwUk ejj , Zng tKvb mntm Avgvt`i AvZkqZvi `ve KiQ ?  
Zvi evi evi tmB GKB `ve Avng tPri bB| Avng tPri bB| tm ejj , Avng `yLZ,  
Avmtj Avng tbkvMÖ| Avgvi cv`tUv AvgvtK GLvfb tUfb wbtq GtmtQ| H mgq Avng  
KvDk t`Ltz cvBwb| wbtRi ARvtšB GB Nvtm Nngta cwo Avi Ngy fvztZB eStZ  
cwi Avgvi fz nta tMtQ| cwj ta wbtRk tkvavbri tPov Kwi | ZZytY Avng  
cyj tki nvtZ|

h9KwU KvQ t\_kK civk g'vbe'vMU Ztj wbj | mevi m`n ntv hLb h9KwU civk  
nvZ t\_kK g'vbe'vMU Ztj wbtZ Pvbj | g'vbe'vM Ltj cvl qv tmj GKUv GK cvDtÜi  
tbvU| KZ,tjv KvW©Avi GKwU Qwe| QweU i ci tPvL cotZB civk tPvL tbtP  
DVj | we`\$qi mvt\_ tm t`Ltz tcj QweU j jyy| wbtRi tPvLk vekm Kitz Kó nq  
civk | tm fite Avng tevanq tbkvq Av"Obantq AvwQ| xi tPvLL civk Avek m Avi  
we`\$qi Qvc t`Ltz cvq|

j jyyGmte j 3/4v tctq tKvbr w`k bv-ZvKta cömt`i wfZti wcti hv"Q| `vtivqb,  
WBFvK G welta civk av w`tz Pvbj bv| WBFvi l cØØ tiM tmj civk l ci |  
tPriwUk tKb wKQB ejj bv civk| civk ejj , G h9K th gvZvj ZvtZ tKvbr m`n  
bvB| civk h9K gly i`k t`Lj |

tiM WBFvi ejj , m'vi , gvd Kiteb, th tjvK wbtR tbkvMÖ| tm Atb`i tbkvi MÜ  
Abfe Kitz cvi bv| WBFvii K\_v i`b civk tiM tdtU coj | tMtd Zv w`ta  
uskvi tQto ejj , KÉv, Avng tbkvMÖ| tZvi tevkvgxi KvityB G emo t\_kK tZvi  
wihK Dtv tmj | cyj k h9KwUk tQto w`ta civk wbt`k ZvtK cömt`i evBti wbtq  
tmj | civk h9KwUk wRtAm Kij , Avgvi emoi A`i gntj tZvgvi tXvKvi mntm  
ntv Kx Kti ?

Avgvi tKvbr Amr Df'k" wQj bv|

GB gvSivZ ...mr Df'k" ? civk xi ejj , Zng Kx Ki| tm Rvbij tm GKRb  
Awdmvi | civk xi ejj , Zvi gvtb Zng GKRb dwKi | dwKi, civk tqtqi mvt\_  
tcØ KitzQ| tZvgvi tZv DvPZ wQj tZvgvi tköY Ablyqx GKUv Kkzi tqtqK  
fvj veimv|



civkv gšyvj q, wntbu Avi tKvúmbi KvR cPÐ e"Í\_vtKb| ZvB tqtqi PwiÎ bó  
nl qvi Rb" `xtKB `vqx Ktib| `x gtb Kti Zvi tqtq Ab" tqtqt`i Zjbrvq AþK  
temk fvtoj | Zvi eo tqtqtK GKRb eo Wv³vtii wBKU wetaq w`tZ tPtqj Qj wKš' tm  
feNxi Kv½vj tkØyi GK MvqtKi tcØg gR ZvtKB wetaq Kij, ZviB cbyveE jvjy  
Rretb ntZ hv"Q GiKGB AvB KiþZ cvti civk| civkv ZvtK Zj Gtb Z\_"  
gšyvj tqi wgdwRK cwi `kR embtq w`tqj |  
civkvi `xi `we GB tQtj UvtKI Zj bvl | jvjy cPÐ tR` | tm hLb Zvi tcØg gRtQ  
mzvsvs ZvtK tdivtbr mæe nte bvl | tqtqi `t\_©ZvtK tZv Zj Dcti ZjþZ nte|  
ZvQvor Zvi tKvþbv evowZ thvM"Zv tbB|  
Zey civkvi `xi tQtj UvtK nvB Kvgkb ev `Zveþm Awdmvi wntmte KvR cvBtq w`tZ  
`vgtK eob cxovcxmo KitiQ| eÚz`i etj Kgctj mPteei GKUv Pvkwi | civkv fq  
cvq cwi Kv,tjvtK| hviv civkvt`i gZv gšyvj`i t`vl LþtZ tRtM AvtQ| civkvi `x  
we`ac Kti `vgtK etj, GKRb Oq cvDÜ teZbavix tKivbxi mvþ\_ civkvi tqtqi wetaq  
ntj cwi Kv,tjv bxi te\_vKte ?  
cØZw`b GKUv tQtj þK bZb Kti evbvtbvUvB wK Avgvi Kcvtj tjLv AvtQ ? Zvg wK  
fzj tMQ ? hLb tZvgvi mvþ\_ Avgvi wetaq ntqj Qj ZvgþZv mvqvb" GKRb tKivbxi  
wQtj | Avgvi ever tZvgvtK tUþb ZjþtQ| Avmtj tZvgvi ever AvgvtK Dcti tUþb  
Zj wb eis mß cØZfvB AvgvtK eo KitiQ| tm GB cØZfv weKvþk mnvqZv KtiwQj  
gvÎ | Zvg wK tqtqi ctj Qvdb MvBQ ?  
wKQzgtb tKvþiv bv civk| G Afvm Zviv DËiwaKvi mþÎ Avgvi KvQ t\_þK tctqtQ|  
KviY, AZþZ Avngl tZvgvtK Gfvte wetaq KtiwQj vg|

## **Lvaxiv Avj -vKZj Avj -Avml qv`**

### **(خمارة القوط الأسود - Kvftj v veovtj i mi vBLvbn)**

cjftbv feftbi vbfP PviftKvYv GKvU Kvgi v | vKš'GUv GKvU i vBLvbn | GLvftb hviv Avftm  
Zviv ci`úfti tPbvRvbn | GKvU AvMz vbgg iqtqQ GLvftb tKvftbv Acivi vPZ RbftK  
t`Lftj B mevB GKmvft\_ Mvb tMtq DftV | t`vKvftbi GKv tK mvi ex gft`i Vftg | GLvftb  
hviv Avftm vbgvqZB Avftm | mevi evmvl cftq GKB RvqMvq |  
t`vKvbnUi bvg tKb Kvftj v veovtj i i vBLvbn G vbtq GKvU tMvj K avau tj tMvQj  
Zvft`i gvftS | mskftqi RU Ljj, Rvbn tMj -t`vKvftbi gvij K iaig | Zvi GKvU tgvUv  
Kvftj v veovj AvftQ | tµZviv `via` cD` Kfti veovj vUftK | t`vKvbnUi Avmj bvg  
ftZvi Kvft |  
veovj vUj `fve GKvZAvj v`v ai ftYi -ZvftK bvPftZ Pvbftj Zvi mvgtb GK cvDÚ ev `B  
cvDÚ tQto vftz nte | GK vKftiv iaU ev GK vKftiv gvQ A\_ev mvgtb` Lvevi vftq  
ZvftK GZ mnftRB AvMz Kiv hvte th, tm GK tUvej t`ftK Av` tUvej t`šovte |  
KZÁZv cKvK tnZcvftq tVK j vMftq cv PvUftZ i iæKite |  
iaig vbgMavPftE kvZj `vó vftq evBfti ZvMftq iq | ex KgPvix Vftg t`ftK tQvÆ Mftm  
Kfti g` vbtq mvftKfti G tUvej t`ftK tm tUvej | tµZviv tgz DftV gaij Avj vftc |  
KLftbv Avcb `yLKó Avj vcPvii Zvi veltq nftq DftV | Kvftj v veovj tK vbtq vovq gE  
nq | hviv KÉ`f fvtjv tm Mvbl afti | yvftKi Rb` nftj l Ni msvi, tQftj tgz Av  
Avfe -AvUftbi K\_v fftj hvq | kvftei tbkvq vte`vftK |  
g` cvqft`i gvUv GZUv D`vi l fvtj vevmvq cY`nq th, gZftq Avv Ansvi tKvftbv  
vKQB Zvft`i `úkKftz cvfti bv | kvb` Nftj veovj liv | gftb nft`Q Avftb`i gfta`  
cftjv GK kvvāx KvUftq t`te liv | nVv GK Avftbv ftvK `iRv vftq XKj kivefti |  
GvftK -l vftK tPvL ejvq | evBfti vMftq k<sup>3</sup> Kvftvi `Zvi tQvU GKvU tPvqi mvft\_ Kfti  
t`vKvftb tXvftK | `iRv AvMftj eftm cfto |  
ftjvKvvi ftPvivi Kvftj v | Zxyè avivj `vó | mYvgt ft`fti AvvKvix, t`Lftz kv<sup>3</sup>kij x |  
tKvbn tm ARvbnvq Zvi `vó vbeÜ | `iRv AvMftj evmv evBfti i vKQB t`Lv hvft`Q bv | GB  
vekvj t`nx ftj vKvUj gv\_vv UvftKi dvKv RvqMvq thvKzi`āZv vQj Gi evBfti Kvftj v Qvov  
Avv vKQB tPvftL covi gftZv tbB |

nVvr Zvi AvMg#b g`cvqxt`i Mvb t\_tg tMj | nvmI eU ntjv| Avb>` dWZ©meB  
Mv#hZvi Avotj XvKv coj | kiveN#ii Dcweó tRvov tRvov tPvL ubweó wP#E  
Avof#te Zv#K t`L#Z j vMj | tj vKwU fqv#K| ZeykiveLvbi i w#Kvj xb gavgq Zvi  
Rb` bó bv K#i c#v#vq nvm AvI Vv#vq t#Z DVj | Z\_w#cl g#bi tKv#Y H A™Z  
tj vKwU Dcw\_wZ, hv fwi cv\_#ii g#Zv tP#e e#m i#t#Q| tm tRv#i nvZZv#j t`I qvq  
kiveLvbi e# #mj mg`vb t`#to wM#q Zvi nv#Z g#`i M#m aw#q w`j | GK P#y#KB  
c#\_g M#m t#l K#i w`j | w#Zxq M#m w#t#q ZvI kvevo K#i Qvoj | Gici GK#F  
AvevI Pvi M#m cvb Kivi ci AvI P#B#Z c#y#bv kivecvbKvixiv AveK n#q tMj |  
i#w#t#q tMj Zv#`i tV#U i nvm| GZ g` cvb Kivi ci I Zvi gv#S tKv#bv c#Zw#qv#B  
j`y Kiv tMj bv| Kv#j v w#ovj wU Zvi cv P#U#Z tMj | G hver Zvi mv#\_ Ggb `g#v#i  
tKD K#i w#b| cv P#U#Z wM#q tRv#i av°v|

tj vKwU Gevi GKUz#to emj | gv\_v W#tb evtg N#j#t`Q| `#Z `vZ tP#e wKwUgU Ki#Q|  
AvI A`k` Kv#iv mv#\_ K\_v ej #Q| c#jv tP#v#vq t#v#ai AvM# #t#B tm in#`gq  
e`w#Z#Z cwiYZ n#q R#Uj i#\_c aviY Kij | c#y#bv g`cvbKvix#`i mK#j B e#S tMj  
AvR iv#Zi me Avb>` dWZ©meB w#bó K#i w`t#Q GB gv#y#wU| ZvB Ah\_v tR#M  
t\_#KB-ev Kx j v#f n#e| mevB ev#o#Z P#j hveri Rb` D#V `w#v#ZB tj vKwU KKR k#ã  
tP#B#q ejj :

tZvgv#`i tKD GLvb t\_#K P#j th#Z cvi#e bv| GLv#bi me c#y#bv t#Zv#v w#t#Ri  
Kv#t#Kl w#k#m Ki#Z cvi#Q bv| GKai#bi f#q Zv#`i t#t#q emj | ga`eqm# GKRB  
ejj :

Avgv#`i P#j hveri e`vcv#i tZvgvi Avci#E K#t#mi ? AvevI tm g#y L#j#j , Avgvi K\_v  
w#t#q evov#v#o Ki#e bv| tZvgiv w#b#Q#B mevKQzi#bQ| ZLb tm ejj , w#k#m K#iv  
Avgiv w#KOB i#w#b| ZLb A™Z tj vKwU ejj , tZvgv#`i g#Zv j`#U gvZij#`i Avng  
w#k#m Kie ? Avgv#K t#vKv w`#Z tP#qv bv, w#t#t#`#n tZvgiv t#B K#v#w#b i#bQ ?

k#³ c#k# Qvov GB R#Uj cwi\_wZ t\_#K g#y# j#v#fi AvI tKv#bv Dcvq t#B| A\_P  
Zv#`i kix#i GZv k#³ I t#B| GZ Acgv#b teva Kij , GiKg Acg#wYZ nevi  
Av#F#Zv Av#M KL#bv nqv#b| i#M AvI K#ó mgq e#q P#j | gv\_v t\_#K nvl qv n#q tMj  
g#`i t#kv|

mevi gtb cketjvKiu tK ? tm uK gvZij ? br cvMj ? Avi GB KvnubB-ev Kx ntZ  
cvti ? Avohntq G-I fvej, etovlv hLb H tjvKUtK g` mrvKiuQj iaug Zvi  
w tK tKej GKUZZvKtqQj ! e`tgRvR Avi we`acvZK fwtZ tmB K`vKvi tjvKiu  
ejj, tZvgv`i tKD Mvix Kijt Avvg ZvtK KtVvi kwi`ft`e|

Gevi cjtbr tμZv`i Ablyq-uebq iia ntjv| Avgv`i tQtj tqtq Nismvi AvtQ|  
vdti thtZ nte Avgv`i | Gevi Zvi gly t\_tK temtq Gtjv- g`tLvt`i Avevi Kxtmi  
msmvi ?

Avmtj Avgiv AZUv Lvivc bB, Avgiv Avgv`i tQtj tqtq`i KvQ vekomx ucZv|  
Gevi tjvKiu evRLvB KtE vPrKvi w`tq ejj, fxiæ bxPztKv\_vKvi | DpzcOmvt` Ngyv ,  
gRvi gRvi `cæf`L Avi hZme ANUb NuUtg Pj | GB i`vLvbvi cjtbr g`cvtq`i  
Avevi I GKB K\_v-Zug tKvb NUbvi K\_v ejQ ? Avgiv tZv uKQB Rvnb bv| GgbuK  
Rvbi tKvtbr AvMhI tbB| AvgvK tautv t`qvi tPov tKvtiv bv| tn tevKvi `j ! mvm  
\_vtK tZv ej tZvgv`i gta` tK Ggb AvQ th G NUbvi Rb`vl vb ? hZme KvcjafI i  
`j |

nZivq tμZv`i Ašli tQtq tMtQ| GZ Mm g`I GB tjvKUtK civ`iKiZ cvij  
bv| bv Zvi tbkv ntqtQ| bv Zvi kixiUv kxZj I `g` ntqtQ| kiveLvbrq gvI GKiu  
`iRv Zvl AvMtj etm AvtQ Zvi gReZ kixi vbtq| kixi tZv bq thb tjvvi Mij |  
mg`i Avkv nmitq GtK Actii w`tK ZvKtq iBj | mKvj bv-nlqv chšI Avgv`i  
GfvteB etm \_vKtZ nte ?

tZvgv`i Rb`hv` mKvj Dv`Z nq, ZteB tZvgiv tmšfvM`evb|

msL`vq tevk nlqv mtEj I iv gvI GKRB e`w`i KvQ e`x| Kvi Y tm cPĐ kv`kij x  
Avi mvmx| GKRB ejj, Avgiv Zvi K\_v fzt hvB| hv nevi nte| Dcv`Z tKD-B  
ZvtK mvm thvMtjv bv| Avi vetivazvl Kij bv|

AetktI Avevi I kvtei tcqvjv Gtjv| Dcto coj kvtei tcqvjq| `vb-Kvj -cvI  
meB g`i PgtK XK XK Kti vMtj vbj | Nti DVj gv\_v| vbR Avmb tQto Njtz  
j vMj | KtE avnbZ ntZ j vMj Mtbi Kvj | tktU tMj uKQxy| fzt tMj `iRvi K\_v|  
fqsKi tjvKvi K\_v| Kvjt v veovj u Ngy tQto Ptj Gtjv tUvetj i cvtk| Avevi  
veovj uvtK vbtq tLjqv tgz DVj | Avevi gvZj vvg, nvm, Avbt` kiveLvbr tRtM  
DVj | gtb nt`Q cjtiv ivtZ I iv Avi kiveLvbr tQto Ptj hvte bv|

nVr D'P`ti nek0fite tn+m DVj K`vKvi kw<sup>3</sup>kyj x fqsKi tj vKwU| Zvi nvmi  
Avl qitR g`"cvqxt`i `Zkw<sup>3</sup> nmi tq tMj | GK Aci tK wPbtZB cvi tQ bv| Kx `via  
g`| Avgiv i ay tKti tKti Avi Mvb Kti mgq bó KiwQ| GKRB ex KgPvixi  
Avl qvR tkvbn tMj | tm tRvvtj v fite KvD tK Ngy t` tK RvMv t bvi Rb` ej tQ:

mKvj ntqtQ| DV|

webtqi mvt\_ GKRB tgvUv tj vK tUvej t` tK g`i Mm I tevZj Ztj wbt"Q| me  
Ki tQ bxi te| `w tPvtLi cvZv Ak tZ fiv| fvi x tKv t b v ` tL Zvi gbUv tK Av"ObaKti  
ti tL tQ| GKRB tj vKwU tK wR tAm Kij, I tn! Kx ntqtQ tZvgvi ? Avmj NUbv wK ?  
tm tKv t b v w` tK bv-Zv wK t q bxi te KvR Kti th tZ j vMj |

tmB fqsKi tj vKwU fvi x ey Rzvi I ci fi Kti wPcv Mij tZ nwtZ nwtZ A`k" ntq  
tMj | GKRBti gtb ntj v tj vKwU tK tKv\_vq thb t` tL tQ|

## Avj -nwi Qv

### (الحادثة - `N9bv)

ivRcḫ\_i mvḫ\_ j vMvḫbv tUvj ḫdvḫb D"P-ḫi K\_v ejḫQ tj vKwU| t`ḫni wKQzAsk  
t`vKvḫbi evBḫi wKQzAsk wFZḫi | GUv KiḫQ KviY, evBḫi i nAḫMvj Zvi K\_v ejvq  
evav mḫḫo Kiḫe bv| K\_v etj tdvḫbi wi wmfviUv ivLḫZ ivLḫZ ejj -GKUzAḫcḫv Kḫiv  
AvmḫQ| tUvj ḫdvḫbi Dci t\_ḫK nij DW wMvḫḫiUi c`ḫKUUv wbj | Gici iv`ḫḫL  
nḫq dḫcḫḫZi Dci `wḫḫj v| tj vKwUi eqm IvU ev Gi KvQvKwḫQ nḫj I t`ḫni Mob  
j ḫḫ, nij Kv-cvZj v| Kcvj Avi tPvL tMvj vKvi | gv\_vq mvgvb` wKQzPḫ cḫKv| evwK  
gv\_vUv tZj wPUwPḫU Pvgovi AveiḫY UvK PK PK KiḫQ| tPniv tRḫj mḫxb, gbUv  
cḫḫḫḫ iv`ḫi wḫK bv-ZwKḫq ZvKvḫ"Q Dḫḫv wḫK| iv`ḫ tNḫJ mḫi mḫi Mḫw `wḫḫbv  
Zvi Dḫḫv WwḫwḫK tm `wḫḫbv| iv`ḫq bvgvi GKUv mḫḫM tḫḫq tm nUḫZ j vMj |  
wMvḫḫiUv tḫḫj w`j | ḫḫL mḫi nḫm| `wḫḫq \_vKv `ḫḫ UḫḫKi ḫa`eZḫc\_ tḫḫḫq  
tm iv`ḫi I cḫḫi hvevi Rb` GḫMḫZ j vMj | UḫḫKi mḫḫ tḫḫḫq mvgḫb ḫḫZB Zvi  
ḫḫb nḫj v I w`K t\_ḫK GKwU teW tḫUḫMḫw cḫḫḫ tḫM Zvi Dci Swḫḫq cḫḫQ| G  
mgq tm wPrKvi wḫq ej wQj - tn cḫḫḫn mevKQzḫMvcbKvi x| tj vKwUi ḫḫ t\_ḫK MoMo  
kḫ teiḫZ j vMj | NUbv`ḫj wNḫi Rḫov nḫZ j vMj tj vḫKiv| tj vKwU Mḫoi mvḫ\_ av`v  
tLḫq KḫqK wḫUvi kḫb` Dḫv aḫ Kḫi iv`ḫq Mḫḫḫq cḫḫwQj | GLb ḫḫb nḫ"Q, iv`ḫq  
cḫḫ AvḫQ gvḫḫy bq, Ab` e`| evmḫU tj vKUvḫK t\_Zḫj ḫZḫi tKvḫj i`wḫḫq Mḫvis Mḫvis  
kḫ Kḫi t\_ḫḫ tMj | tj vKwU iv`ḫq Dcḫ nḫq cḫḫ AvḫQ| GKUy bovPov ḫbB| ḫKD  
ZvḫK `ḫkḫKivi mḫm KiḫQ bv| WḫBfvi ejj, Avgvi tKvḫbv t`vl ḫbB| tj vKwU nVv  
J `wḫḫq \_vKv UḫḫKi Avovj t\_ḫK tei nḫq Avgvi Mḫoi mvgḫb j vḫḫḫq cḫḫḫQ| Zvi  
DwPZ wQj evḫ wḫK ZvKvḫbv| tm Avi I ejj, ZvḫK AvNvZ t\_ḫK evḫḫbv tKvḫbvfvḫeB  
mḫḫ wQj bv| nVv AvnZ tj vKwUi ḫḫ t\_ḫK Avl qvR tei nḫj v| mvgvb` GKUzbḫḫ  
Avevi I bxi e wḫ\_i nḫj v| tj vḫKiv ej vevj KiḫZ j vMj - gviv hvqub, tm RḫeZ AvḫQ|  
mḫḫZ Lḫḫ teḫk AvNvZ tḫḫḫḫQ| `ḫZ cḫḫ k Gḫj v| tj vKwUḫK wNḫi \_vKv gvḫḫḫ i t`qvj  
tḫ` Kḫi Pvcv cov tj vKwUi KvḫQ Gḫj v|  
wPrKvi wḫq cḫḫ k mevBḫK `ḫi mḫḫ ḫḫZ ejj | tj vḫKiv mḫḫ tMḫj I `ḫḫ i Bj AvnZ  
tj vKwUi I ci | ḫKD etj DVj - ḫj vKuv Gfvḫe cḫḫ t\_ḫK gviv hvḫe ? Avgvḫ` i wK wKQz  
Kivi ḫbB ?

tj vKvUi K\_v i DEti cny k agK w`tq ejj - mvgvb" `uk©ZvK nZv Ki tZ cvti | Gi  
mnvnh"Kvix cny k Avi G`vayj Y | iv`lq RvbRU tj tM tMj | `xN©mvi tZ AvU tK coj  
Mvno, tj v | tKD tKD tj vKvU tK t`L tZ j vMj | Avevi tKD tKD AvZ vM tI n t q  
wb tR t` i `wó wdwi t q wbj |

B tZvg t a" úB t m j evRv tZ evRv tZ D xvi Kvix cny k G t j v | cny k Avdmvi Mfxi `wó  
w`tq wKQy Y tj vKvUi Ae`v ch e y Y Kti cny k tK wRÁvmv Ki t j b G`vayj Y Av t m v b |  
Avdmvi Avevi Rvb tZ PvB t j b- NUbvi tKv t b v m v y x Av t Q ? m v y x t` q v i R b" G v M t q  
G t j v wZ b R b | U t K W B f v i , g y P Avi t U a n v t Z w b t q K v e v i w e t m Z v e v j K | m e L t j  
e j j , cny k Avdmvi t K |

Wv³v t i i Mvno Av m j | Wv³v i Av n t Z i Ae`v ch e y Y Kti cny k Avdmvi t K e j j ,  
Av g v i g t b n t` Q I t K G`vayj t Y t Z v j v D v P Z | Av t i K R b t R v t i t P v t q e j j , e i s I t K  
w`g i `v k n v m c v Z v t j w b t q h v l q v D v P Z | G e v i m e v i K \_ v i t b cny k Avdmvi e j j ,  
Av v g w b w ó Z , Ae`v L y B g v i v Z K |

w`g i `v k n v m c v Z v t j i w e f v M x q c a v b Wv³v i t j vKvUi c i x y m b i x y v Kti m n K v i x t K  
e j t j b- e v g w`t K d z d z m g v i v Z K Av N v Z t j t M t Q | G U v n v t U P G K`g c v t k n l q v t Z  
Ae`v L y B m v i q v m |

G K R b e j j , A c v t i k b K i t Z n t e ?

Wv³v i g v \_ v b v w o t q R e v e w`t j b- b v w K Q y t Y i g t a" I i ú k w d t i Av m t e | G K U z c t i B  
t j v K v U v K v t Z K v t Z b t o D V j | M o M o k a K i t Z j v M j | e k U v A w`i Z v q K v t Q |  
`R b Wv³v i t j vKvU t K ch e y Y K i t Q b | c a v b Wv³v i Z v i m n K v i x i w`t K Z v M t q  
e j t j b , t k l K t i v |

cny k Avdmvi t j vKvUi w e Q v b v i K v t Q w M t q e j t j b , Av v g I i c v i P q U v R v b t Z P v B |  
t U w e t j i D c i Z v i m n K v i x m v t R P U i w e Q v t b v K v M t R w Z v b K v R i i a e K i t j b | t i w R v ÷<sup>a</sup>  
L v Z v q c Z`y`k f b v g t j L v n t j v | Avdmvi t j vKvUi R`v t K t U i c t K t U n v Z X w K t q  
G K v U c y t b v a u t P i t Q v U g v m b e`v M t e i K i t j b | G i c i m e , t j v c t K t U n v Z X w K t q  
U v K v c q m v t e i K i t Z j v M t j b | U v K v , t j v m v t R P U i n v t Z Z t j w`t j b | U v K v A v i c q m v  
w g v j t q P v i t k v c A v k U v K v | G L v b t` t K w K Q y U v K v Wv³v i d I R x t m i j v B g v t b i R b" |  
cny k Avdmvi G e v i Wv³v t i i t` q v t c h m u c k t b n v Z w`t j b | Z \_ v q t j L v A v t Q -  
G`v j t K v n j x q D c v`v b I g v`K`e" w b w l x | P v K v d c v b b v K i v f v t j v | t c h m u c k t b i

tjLvLv cto cnyk Awdmvi gtb gtb nvmtjb, KviY WK GB GKB cingk©Zvi  
tcbmucktbl wj tL uQtb GB Wv<sup>3</sup>vi AvR t\_tK gvmLvfbK AvfM| Gici cnyk  
Awdmvi Zvi ctkU nvZioq GKwU tQvU eVM tei Kitjb| eVMi wFZi cvlqv tMj  
KzAvb kixtdi mivi GKwU tQvU msKjb| eVM Avi wKQybv-tctq cnyk Awdmvi  
fMæ`tq ejtjb- tjuKwU wFwRUs KvW©cvlqv tMj bv| eVMi wFZi GKwU ctkU  
nvZ ivLtzB cvlqv tMj - wZb tkv UvKv Avi AfaR tmvbi cvZ| Gici cvlqv tMj  
tQvE GKwU cVMKU| LjtZB GKaitbi AvZti mgyv bvtK Gtjv| cnyk Awdmvi nWP  
wtjb| KtqKevi nWP wtq `z cVteU eU Kti wtjb| AbryÜvb PjtZ jvMj Avi hv  
hv cvlqv tMj me wj tL ivLv ntjv| mektl cvlqv tMj fVR Kiv GK cõv KwMR|  
GKwU wPw, wPwi iiaZ tjLv- fvB AvRR, Avj on tZvgvK `xNRxex KiaK| mwZ`B  
AvR Avgvi Rxeabi eo Avkv ciY ntjv| Awdmvti `wó ZwiLi RvqMq tMj |  
AvRtKB tjLv ntqQ wPwU| wPwU uQj cvmlqvWP gZv `jea", gwZi gZv RgvU|  
cnyk Awdmvi fvetjb Zvntj `NBvB wK Zvi Rxeabi eo Avkv|  
Wv<sup>3</sup>vi RvbtZ Pvbtjb ?

tctqQb wKQz?

wZvb Wv<sup>3</sup>vti tPvL t\_tK `wó mwiq Avevi wPwU covi wtk gtbvthvM wtjb|  
ôAZtci Avgvi ek t\_tK wZ<sup>3</sup> kfm tewiq Gtjv| me tewiq Gtjv Avj nvg`wj j on|  
Avgbv, ewinqv hqbe Iti emiozB AvtQ| Avi tm GLvfb PvKwi KitQ| AZxtZi  
`tL-Kó-Aw`iZv hLbB gtb cto Avgg ZLbB gvnvbye Avj on cksmv Kwi | KviY,  
wZvbB myúo mrvh`Kvix| AtbK ftePšš Avgg PvKwi tQto t`qvi wmvšš wbtqU|  
KviY hZw`b kni vKe ZZw`b Avgvi `v` fvtjv nlqv mæe bq| Avgg wntme Kti  
t`tLwQ, gvI wZb nvRvi UvKvi wmbgtq Avgg thB miKvix PvKwi Kwi Zv ghPv Ges  
Rxeb avitYi gta" we`li e`eavb| GRb" Avgg wmvšš wbtqU Avgg tcbkfb hve Avi  
kxNB t`tk wdti Avme BbkvAvj on|

wdti Gtm kvBLj Lvdi AvāZ Zvlqviti `ievti thvM wtq Avcbvi gtbvgy gRwj tmi  
m`m`ne| GLb memKQzfvjtj vfvteB PjtQ| Gi tPq fvtjv wKQzmæe bq|ō

cnyk Awdmvi wPw eU Kti ejtjb, tjuKwU GKRB miKwi PvKwi Rrex| wKš' Zvi tKvfbv  
cwipq tbB| cnyk Awdmvti K\_v itb Wv<sup>3</sup>vi ejtjb, Avgiv Avgv`i cõqvRbxq KvR, wj  
tkl Kwi | Lg mæe h\_v mgta I i cwievti tjtKiv gM©Gtm jvk wbtq hvte|



# Avj -Rixgvn

## (Aciva - الجريمة)

bvnrRe gvndzRi AbvgÜvbgj-K tQvUMtí i gta" Avj -Rixgvn Ab"Zg| G Mtí i bvqK  
GKRb mivsewí K th Z`tšlí `t\_°eú eQi ci wR GjvKvq wdti Avtm| Zvi `xN©  
Abgvw`wZtZ AfbK wKQz`tj tMtQ| `Zwi ntqtQ bZb bZb moK| `xN©cúBk eQi ci  
wdti cjtbr emNi ,tjv AvtMi gtZv mgnm%4Z \_vKtj I Zvi GjvKvi ceÁj I  
cúDgvÁtj i AfbK cwieZ® ntqtQ| t÷kibi vekvj cšli, nij d`vktbi `vj vb,  
titbmvi cZxK KI.tKi gwZ,°Gj vKvi wfZi `xN©cúK`lgnvmok, vekvj evMtbi cmbi  
tj K Gme t`tL tm AwffZ| ZvtK Avtiv PgK w`tqtQ bZb bZb wki KviLvbr, taqv  
tei nevi wPgwb Avi bvbraitbi htšj Avl qvR|

GjvKvi Uvb Avi gvbtj i wfto wgtk \_vKvi Bt"Oq tm GLvrb GtmQ| ZvB \_vKvi Rb"  
dvU GtRvU Avdtm XzK Itquls iatg emvi mgq Avtkcvtki KtqKRb brix-cjatl i  
mvt\_ efm AvtQ| Zvt`i mvt\_ Mfxi five Rgvtbvi gvbmKZv wbtq cšZ \_vKtj I Zviv  
wQj wbtRt`i gta" Avj vcPwi Zvq gk,j |

nVvr Kti Zvi Kvrb Gtjv- jvtki cwipq cvl qv hvq wb| AvtiKRb ejj , bv bv Avng  
tZv KtqK eQi AvtM Kei t`qv Av, tb Sj tm hvl qv jvk t`Ltz tctqW|

Zv-I Pvi cúB eQi AvtMi NUbv| cwiKvq GUvB tj Lv ntqWj | nZ`vKvix m`útkKQB  
Rvbr hvqwb| m`eZ Zviv GKwU mslmWZ Pµ hviv nZ`v, tciortbr, `vdb Kiv me,tj vB  
Kti \_vtK| Avi GRb" eújtvtKi cúqvRb| Zvt`i Avj vtci gta" XzK bvqK GKwU cke  
Qto w`tj b- NUbvUv hLb NtUtQ ZLb wK GjvKvq GKwU tgta wbtLwR nl qvi msev`  
cúvvi Z nqwb ? Zvi ckei tb mevB K\_v eÜ Kti wKQxy Pz iBj | Gici GKRb  
ejj , tm mgtqi K\_v GLb `šiy Kiv m`e bq|

Gevi tm eStZ cvij ZvtK tKD mv`ti MhY Ktiwb| tm It`i mvt\_ K\_v etj five  
RgvfZ PvBtj I wvbgq Avi I GKv ntq coj | gtb gtb tm mta`n Kitz jvMj | hv  
tenk ckeKwi Zvntj Dtev I iv Avgvq mta`n Kti emte|

ZvB tckvi cšZ kvteva eRvq titL AwZwi<sup>3</sup> eKeKwb eÜ Kitz nte| GjvKvq  
cúekKvix mta`nfvRb tvvti tMvcb w`K,tjv mZKZvi mvt\_ j`y ivLtz nte|  
GtRtUi mvgtb Avmvi WwK coj | tmB Kvgivq wMtqI t`tL tmB Aciva wltq Avj vc

KiþQ| me® GKB Avj vc| GB e`vcviiU ubtq cþjv Gj vKvq hZUv fxZ ZZUv fq  
Kvþiv tbB Avj mþK ubtq|

Gevi AbyrÜvbKvix nei stqi ce® þKi th iagiu fivov ubtj b ZvtZ tj vK Mg Mg  
KiþQ| Gevi Zvi aviYv ntj v- j kvvqZ nel quU tm mvgþb tUþb Zþte| þm G Gj vKvq  
Avmvi cte®DaÿZb Avdmvi ZvtK etj uQj - tmšfvM tZivri th H Gj vKvi tKvþbv  
ubivcËv Kgr® þZivgtK tPtþ bv| ubivcËv Kgr® i e`vcvði Zvt`i Lvivc aviYvi KviY  
tm Rvþb bv| i ayGBUKzRvþb, ZvtK ZvovZvno H Gj vKvq uMtq Z\_ msmþ KiþZ nte|  
GB Aciva nelþq me Avj vgZB bó ntq tMtQ| G Acivta e`x Kiv ntqþQ bvg  
cwiPqnxþ GKUv tj vKþK| AbyrÜvbKvixi cþkæ Revte ubivcËv Kgr® i mþúþK®  
DaÿZb Avdmvi Rvþvtj b, ubivcËv Kgr® vB GB NUbvq RvnoZ| mþeZ ZvivB Acivtai  
Avj vgZ bó KiþZ fvgKv tiþLþQ| Avi Gi Kvi YUvB þZivgtK LþR tei KiþZ nte|  
Acivtai Avj vgZ tMvcb Kivi e`vcvði Gj vKvixmxi fvgKv KZUKZ? ubnZ tj vKvU uK  
G Gj vKvi ? Zvntj nZ`vKvixl G Gj vKvi | Z\_ D`NvUv bv nI qvi inm` Kx ? Ab`vb`  
RvqMvq Acivaxt`i thfvte cvKovl Kiv nq GLvþb Acivaxt`i aþi tKb Zv Kiv nt`Q  
bv ?

AbyrÜvbKvix th KvþR nvZ w`þqþQ Zv iia`Kivi Rb` Kvgiv ntZ tei ntj b| ZLb  
ubivcËvKgr® i GKRb ejj, AvcbvþK Avgvþ`i Avdþm thþZ nte| Zviv uK Zvi  
AvPiþY mþ`þni uKQztctþqþQ ? GLþbv KvR iia`nqvþ Zvi AvþMB P`vtj þÄi gþL ?  
Avdmvði i mgvþb uMtq `wvþZB vZvþ bvg Avi tckv ubtq mþ`n Kiþj l AbyrÜvbKvix  
ZvtK Rvþvtj b þm GKRb WþBfvi | Avdmvi Gevi Zvi AbyrÜrmy`w ubtq Zvi mivv  
kixi fvþjv Kþi t`Lþj b| Avi l t`Lþj b Zvi cwiPqcÎ l WþBwfs jvBþmÝ|  
mþ`nRbK uKQB aiþZ cvitj b bv| Zte G Gj vKvþK Kgr®ýÎ wntmte teþQ tþl qvi  
KviY RvþþZ Pvbþj b, vZvþ ejþj b- Guv cþZ`K bvMvþþKi `ea Avakvi | GþZ  
Revev`wvZvi cþqvRb cþo bv| vZvþ Avevi l GKB cþkæKiþj b| AbyrÜvbKvix fvþj b,  
`vqZj cvj þb mdj Zv jvf KiþZ ntj kvšl\_vKþZ nte| vZvþ ejþj b, Avng G Gj vKvq  
Rbþ ubtq uQ| ZvQvov GLvþKvi mþvqZ KvR Avgvi vvi uRK l `vþ`i Rb` Dchþ |  
ubivcËv Avdmvi Qvovi cvÎ bq| Gevi etj emþj b, G Gj vKvq Avcbvri cwi eri ev  
AvZþq`Rb tKD AvþQ| vZvþ ejþj b, bv, bvB| cþq cþþk eQi cte®GB Gj vKv tQþo  
Ab` RvqMvq Pþj tMtQ| AbyrÜvbKvix uKQzej þZ uMtq l t\_þg tMtj b| eis ejþj b,

AvgrtK G Gj vKv tQto `fi mti thtZ nte bv uK ? cnyj k Avdmvi meikQzidwi tq w`tq  
ejj , hvb| AbyrÜvbKvix fvetj b, Avgrvi AvPi tY ubÖq Zviv Ggb uKQztcqtq, hvi  
KvitY Zviv m`n KtitQ| Zeytm gv\_v t`tK meikQzZvmo tq w`tjv| bv ntj tm  
gygfb KivR KitZ cvite bv| m`n Avi RivJ Zv ZvtK duntq t`te| hv Zvi  
tMvcbxqZv cKvk Kti w`tZ cvti |

GKw`b tm U`v Kti `Rb tj vK t÷kfb tcStQ w`wQj | i`btZ tcj Zt`i K\_v| Kx  
ubgö! Kx tj vgnl R! KZBbv cvlvY ü`tqi KivR| tqtqiu uQj LgB mxi| uKŠ`Av\_b  
tqtqiu i uKQB evik ivLvb| AbyrÜvbKvix I`i Avtj vPbvq XzK tMj | Avi ejj ,  
Avng cwi Kvq ctouQ j vki gng m`utK`hiviv Ávb ivtL Zviv gng ciL Kti gZž KviY  
etj w`tZ cvti | GB gZžvb hLb H Acivtai KvitY ntqtQ Zvntj nZ`vUv uK GKRB  
KtitQ bvik KtqKRb KtitQ ZtZv Rivv hvte| K\_v i`tb hvixiv tntm DVj | wZvb  
Gfite K\_v etj mtZ`i w`tK AvMvZ PvBtj b| uKŠ`bv| mevB ugjt nZ`vi Avj vgZ  
tMvcb Kite ? nZ`vKvixK Avovj Kti ivLte ? tKb ? GUv uK B`Qvq Zviv KitQ ?  
bvik eva` ntq KitQ ?

Avti Kevi AbyrÜvbKvix hvix ubtq hLb ÖDqlyj ugvvno` hvw`Qj ZLtbv tmB GKB Avj vc  
| Avi Avtj vPvri aiYI GKB tKD gly LjtQ bv| cvtk \_vKv GK hvix Ab` hvix`i  
Bkviv Kti U`v Pvj tKi e`vciti mZK`Ki uQj |

A\_P thUKzZviv etj uQj meUKztm i`tb ubtqiuQj | tm Ablyvqx Zvi AbyrÜvb cwi Pvj bv  
Kiv Ges hvPvBevQvB Kti Abgrtbi gva`tg dj vdvj tei KitZ tPov Kti | Rivv tMj ,  
gvbvmK nvmcvZvtj i feb ubgöYi Rb` hLb kigKiv gvU Lg uQj ZLb nVir meölg  
tqtqiu gZ t`n GK kigtKi tPvL ctol kigKiu ntjv ceA`tj i ÖgnvKiv kgmö  
Gj vKvi Önvl qvZž RjyÖ Gi Qvtq`x tMvT`i tj vK| Zvntj GK\_v uKQBv ugj cvl qv  
hvq-cwögvA`tj i abx tj vKt`i tKD tqtqiu tK nZ`v Kti \_vKte| thtnZz`B A`tj i  
gta` netiva Pj tQ| ckaGLvb Zvntj tKb ceA`tj i tj vtKiv G Z` tMvcb Kite ?

AbyrÜvbKvix tmB kigKtK tctql nvi vtj b| Zvi KvQ t`tK fvmv fvmv uKQzRivv tMj |  
GKw`b bv-etj wZvb Mötg Pjt tMjt b| AbyrÜvbKvix Z` tei KitZ cüZiu uelq Zbæ  
ZbæKti netk`Y Kti | eÜzvÜtei mSL`v evovq| tewnmve Rbtmevq gbthvM t`q|  
emio, Kvd nvDR, gvtkö, U`v melvbb tmB Acivtai Avj vc| tKD etj ivtM tyvtf

tKD etj VvÆv"Qfj | Kvfv K\_vfZB intm"i Kvfv c`P Dfæ\$wPZ nq br| cõvY tei  
Kiv Kwb nq cto| KviY Gi tcQtb itqfQ fq, j ¾v, AmfPZbZv Avi J`vmb`|  
GKw b evRvfi wMfQ AbyÜvbKvix f`Lfj b, GKw `wi`a tqtq Kv b tcfZ wKQzjf vKi  
K\_v ibfQ| tmB Aciva mæufK©Mí KivQj | If`i K\_v itb tqtqUi `fPvL Mvotq  
Akë SivQj | Zvi `wv`cY©fPniv Avi wBRë tmS`h©AbyÜKvixfK AvKI© Kij |  
`iZi KvUtq tm tqtqUi tcQtb wMfQ eSfZ cvij tqtqU KufQ| Gici hLb tm  
evRvfi i tkl cõfšf tcfQ tmj, GK tjtKi K\_v ZvfK wvgtq w`j | ZvfK Dfík" Kfi  
tKD GKRB ejj, Avcbvi fPnivq DvMæZv f`Lv hvf"Q| mæZ Avcub KvR tdtj  
Abw`fK Avm³ nq ctofQb| GK cvj k Avdmvi K\_vU etj Zvi w`fK w`i nq VvÜv  
gv\_vq ZvKfQ AvfQ| tm ejj, evRvi KifZ GfmQ| bZb gvfv U`v` ti fL GfmQ|  
cvj k Avdmvi Pfj tmfj b| tm-l Avi H tqtqUfK LfR tcj br| tckv`vi U`v`  
Pvj fKi gfvZ KfQKw b U`v` Pvj vq| hvfZ tKD mf`n KifZ br cvfi |  
ga`ivfZ evRvfi i cvfki i wLvbrq XfK f`fL cPz` tjk g`cvfb e`f| wfZfi UKfv  
K\_v, Mvfb Kij, Avi nÆfMvj | f`vKvbi wfZiUv Mig nq AvfQ wtkm, tafqv Avi  
bó evZvfm| tm-l GKUzg`cvb Kij | Zte fve f`Lv cPz` g` tLq gvZvj nq Ávb  
nwfifQ| Zvi këYk³ mRvM| ,iaZcY©K\_v,tjv tbvU Kfi wbf"Q gfb cvZvq|  
K\_v, Mí, tKŠZK meB Pfj fQ| mevKQz` tK`le`yH Aciva| GZ K\_v gvfs GKw  
K\_v Zvi Kvfb ffm Gj

-Avgiv mevB Amvq

Avfi KRB ivfMi mfi ejj, Zv bq eis Avgiv Kvcjad |

Av, fbi fMvj v hw` fZvgvi c\_ tiva Kfi Zvntj Zvg Kx Kite? tmB Av, fb Svæ f`e|  
wK AvfQ Svæ `vl | Avi fZvgvi exiZi f`Lvl | Mij evkv Kfi mevB nvmfZ j vMj |  
Zvi w`fK ZvKfQ l ivl wKQzK\_v ejj | K\_v,tjv msi yY thvM" etj gfb ntjv Zvi |  
hv Z`šf KvR mnvqZv Kite| KviY GfZ wQj wvvi qvm `fKvfi w³ | tm Zvf`i Avi l  
wbKUeZ©ntjv| gf`i MfÜ Zvi tenvj Ae`v| `iRvi KvQ GKUv wRvbm Zvi gfbvthvM  
AvKI© Kij, GKRB cvj k Avdmvi mf½vctb f`vkvb f`fK temfQ hvf"Q| tm Zvi  
gv`f` mRvM Kfi | tckvi aiY mæufK©f`te tb| Zvi gfb ntjv cf` cf` wec` l v  
tcfZ AvfQ| A`k" wect`i AvksKv gfb| ZeyZvi gfb ntjv tm tckvMZ wqfgi  
evBfi KvR KifQ br| Zvi KvR fZv tgav w`fQ wPšf Kiv| tm wPšf Kfi Avgvfk wbtq

tKvřbv AvıKvřjZ NUbv mřıı AvřMB t`vKvb Z`vM Kiv DıPZ| Dřřř ivRcř\_ vePiY  
KivUv fıřjv nře bv| gřřgřb U`vř Pvj vřbv DıPZ bq| tKvřbv AAvZ KviřY tdtın  
hřevi fıq\_vřK| ZvB tm vbřRi evmıq vdti tMj bv| gřvřev t÷kb aři ivRavbxi v`řK  
hřevi vřřř Kij |

t÷křb tçřřřZB Křai I ci GKıU nřřZi `úk©Abyře Kři | vçQřb vdti t`řL tmB  
çřř k Aıřdmvi | GKUzAřçřvi ci çřř k Aıřdmvi gřřřK tnřm ej řj b, AvçbvřK ve`vq  
RıbvřZ GřmıQ| GUřřZv GKRB eÜz çřř Acı eÜz `vıqZj| GZv`řbi AvıřÜřřb Kř  
řçřř b ?

Avçbvıv h\_vh\_fřře `vıqZ;çřř b KıřQb bv | řj vřKıv řZv K\_v ej řQ bv|

Aıřg Rıvb Křřiv Křřiv vıřRK Actıı nřřZ| ZvB Zvıv gřř LjřřQ bv| vřřř Ařřřı Rgv  
AvřřQ řřřř| Avı `ařřř GKUv mřgv AvřřQ|

çřř k Aıřdmvi nřř Křřřře gv\_v řbřo RıbvřZ PıBřř b, Avçbvı gřř Avıřř`ı `vıqZ;Kř ?  
b`řvıřPıv çřřřôv Kiv|

bv, Avıřř`ı `vıqZ;nřřQ vııvçřřıı řřv Kiv| vıq\_v D`vııY mıgřb vbřq bq eis vıřçřřř  
řj Lvi AvřřM `xNřřY vřřř Kıřřb| vıřçřřřKřı vřř Lřřb ?

çřř k Aıřdmřřıı K\_vq Amřřb nřř tm ej j , Aıřg vřř Le řh, mKj Av`křřb nřř tMřřQ  
vřřř vııvçřřıı çřřřôZ AvřřQ|

# cōg cwi t"Q`

## welqe`

Aviwe mwinZ` Z\_v wekfmvntZ`i BwZnvtm GK D<sup>3/4</sup>j cōZfv bvrRe gvndR| Aviwe  
mwinZ`i cōYtK`<sup>a</sup> wgti i MvD tcvitq tMvUv Avie wektK Avtj vnoZ Kti Zui Agi  
Mš`<sub>3</sub> tji vi Pwin`v wekgq Qvotq cto| evsjv mwinZ` tQvUMtí i RbK i ex`bv\_ VvKž,  
Zui Mtí i Kj vtKškj, i Pbv%kj x, welq `eiPtí`i mvt\_1 Zui Zžbv nq bv| GgbwK  
Zui tj Lvi gvb GZUv mgxkvj x th, wekbw`Z Bstí wR mwinZ`i cō`vZ Mí Kvi GwMvi  
Gtj b tcv, mgvítmU gtgi gtZv BDtívxcq mwinZ`tKi mvt\_1 Zui Zžbv Kiv Ptj bv|  
Aviwe mwinZ`i w`Kcvj `gungvq fv`i ZI dxK Avj -nvKxg, wReivb Lwjj wReivb,  
wGLvBj bōAvBgv I gvngy ZvBgtyi gtZv kv<sup>3</sup>ai Aviwe tj LtKi mvt\_ wZvb  
Zžbvnx| Gi Kvi Y, cōwjj Z i xwZ fv<sup>1/2</sup>v, Kvuvub wbgfY wbcy`yZv, wR`wPšlavivi  
ifcvqY Avi Adžvb mjo mvti bvrRe gvndR GK we`sqKi cōZfv|  
Zui i Pbv%kj xi tgšij KZ; wZ`bZb welqti Dc`vcbv, wktí i KviaKvR, gtbvgyKi  
msjvc mjoZ Ace<sup>o</sup> yZv Avi cōPxb I AvawpK Aviwe mwinZ`i mgšq mvab, Zui  
mwinZ`i Dtj tthvM` wektl Z; ZvK AZžbxq Kti Ztj tQ|  
eū weevn, thšbvPri, gv`Kvkw<sup>3</sup>, Akwjj Zv, etxi mvt\_ Kgvixi weevn, mvgvRK I  
cwi evni K mgm`v Zui mwinZ`Ktq<sup>o</sup> GKUv eo AskRto Avtj wPZ ntqtQ|  
bvrRe gvndtRi Mí Mš`<sup>o</sup> wqv Avj wno (دنيا الله - Avj wni `wqv) cKwvKZ nq 1962  
mvtj | meqvu 14 wU Mí `vb tctqtQ GLvtb| G Mí`<sub>3</sub> tji vi welqe`tK`žUv fvM fvM  
Kiv hvq- 1. mvgvRK welq wbtq 2. mjoZĒ; wbtq| G Mš`<sup>o</sup> cvV Kiti bvrRe gvndR  
mútk<sup>o</sup>Avgt`i gtb bZb avi Yvi Rbž tbtē| GLvtbi Avgiv Zui PgrKvi `kwí K  
`yZvi cwi Pq cvB| G Mš`<sup>o</sup> دنيا الله (wqv Avj w) هنزل والعسكري (nvbhvj I qv  
Avj -AvmKvi x), الجامع (Avj -Rwgg), في الضرب (w Avj -`ie) BZ`wí Mtí brix  
alŸ, gv`Kvkw<sup>3</sup>, kvZv, PvcvevRx, `wv`<sup>a</sup>, mvgvRK `elg`bwvzi gtZv Avtj wPZ  
welq<sub>3</sub> tji v GKRb `y mwinZ`tKi tj LbtZ myi I mvej xj fvte wPwíZ ntqtQ| G  
mKj Mtí mgvRtPZbv I wki ifci Ace<sup>o</sup>gj eÜb mwvaz ntqtQ|

G Mš' mZÉpel qK M' ,tj vi gta" i tqfQ معد (gI Av`), كلمة في الليل (Kvj gv dx Avj -j vBj), الحادثة (Avj -nvm` Qv) BZ" | G mKj M' gZi fqvenZv, moinm", gZi nm" btq mwnZ" m nqfQ ggúKPKvibi gva'tg |

(evBZzmvBiqBm mgyAv) bwiRe gvndzRi Avi I GKU Dj LthM' M' Mš' | cKvkZ nq 1962 mtj | mgKjxb mgvRe'e`vi TAU-wePzZ, kvmtKi %vPvi bwiZ Avi Avcb`vkK Abfzi cKvk NtUQ G Mš' | G Mš' cU M' B iPbv%kxi Abgg %kto'i wfi w`tqB cPj Z ivRbwzi cZ Zxe^ Avytci mij aYnbZ nqfQ | Pj gvb ivR%wZK Ae`vi ywZKi w`K Zj aitiQb | we`gvb ev`éZv cKvk Kitz KLtbv Avk` btqfQb cZxKx e^te'i, Avevi KLtbv mgvtj vPbv KitiQb`úofite | G Mš' GKU M' سائق القطار (mvmqK Avj -wZvi) | hvi Kwiwb ntjv-GKRb gvZvj tij Pvj K AvZ`z tij Pvj v`Q, tm hvix, bv tij KgPvix Kviv AwfthwMB`i bQ Avi bv tKvibv t`kfb tij`vgv`Q | wDZ`Nvbi nvZ t`K evi Rb` hvixiv Aw`i nq Dv`Q | tkl chS' NtU hvq fqven`Nv | G M' bwiRe gvndz`^vPvix kvmtKi weiat`x tmv`Pvi nqfQb |

Aek` Zu Ab` GKU Mš' weL`vZ M' (Lvmqiv Avj -wZj Avj -Avml qv`) GLvbl Abj/c mgvtj vPbv`k`gvb | G mskj tbi الخوف (Avj -LDd) M' ivR%wZK Aw`i Zv I mš'tmi wP` Zj aiv nqfQ | Avj -dvi Mvbw AA'tj i Awavmxi Avj -Avl qvi I Rjwb bigK`šymxi AZ`vPti AwZó | G AZ`vPti i nvZ t`K Gj vKvewmK evZ kwiš' i yvq btqvmRZ nq cvj k | GKw`b t`Lv hvq G cvj kB mšymxi fvgKvq AviePZ nq | G Mš' me ,tj v M' B bwiRe gvndzRi Mxi Aš'`ó, cZxKvk` I Kwiwb wbg`Y`yZvi Qvc ivLb |

(ZvNZv) تحت المظلة I (Lvmqiv Avj -wZj Avj -Avml qv`) (Lvmqiv Avj -wZj Avj -Avml qv`) M' Mš'`w cKvkZ nq 1969 mtj | Zu wj wLZ M' Mš' ,tj vi gta" (Lvmqiv Avj -wZj Avj -Avml qv`) bwbv Kvity Avtj wPZ | 19 w M' btq G Mš' | wktivbg M' (Lvmqiv Avj -wZj Avj -Avml qv`) -G`^vPvix kvmtKi wmsm-wefó I fqvj AvPiY Zj aiv nqfQ | جنة (RvbwZ Avj -AvZdij) kxl R msj vcag`M' tj LtKi agf` nek'tmi Avfim, الرجل السعيد (Avi ivRj Avm-mvqx`) M' e`c`' e`w^t`i gvbwK Aw`i Zv,

المتهم (Avj-gġvniġ) Mġi cġj tki t<sup>-</sup>QvPvni Zv Avi mrgvbtj i Dci wbgġ AZ<sup>v</sup>Pvi  
Avi weo<sup>v</sup>bvi mġv<sup>v</sup>RK bvbv Ae<sup>-</sup>vi wPġ dġj DġvġQ|

تحت المظلة (ZvnZv Avj -wghj on) Mġi w tQvUMġi nġj I cġKZ.Aġ<sup>o</sup>GġU tQvUMġi i  
cġPġj Z i wZġZ i wPZ nqub| wfbæAvi<sup>1</sup>/<sub>2</sub>K Avi bZb tgRvġR Mġi w i wPZ| GġUġK  
bxii yvag<sup>o</sup> Mġi I ej v Pġj | mgvġRi cġZġU tkġY Pj gvb weġkġ hwišġ RiUj Zv,  
cġZKj-Zv I Aw<sup>-</sup>i Zvq fġġQ| RxebUv thb wmtbgvi Kwvubi gġZv| cġZ<sup>-</sup>ġKB hvi hvi  
fiġKvq Awfbq KiġQ| G thb hwišġ RiUj Zvq ev<sup>-</sup>é Rxeb| Mġi wU i bv<sup>-</sup>wbK tmš<sup>-</sup>h<sup>o</sup>  
LġB cġksmbxq| Zte AwfÁ cġVK Qvov Gi gj-ZĒj tevSv `jan e<sup>v</sup>cri |

1971 mġj bwiRe ġvndġRi (wKvqvZb wġj v we<sup>-</sup>vqvn I qv  
wġj v wbnvqvn) I شهر العسل (kvniaAvj -ŌAvQvj) Mġi Mġš<sup>-</sup> wġ cġKwġZ nq|  
حكاية بلا بداية وبلا نهاية (wKvqvZb wġj v we<sup>-</sup>vqvn I qv wġj v wbnvqvn) tZ i tġtQ cġPġU Mġi |  
Avi شهر العسل (kvniaAvj -ŌAvQvj)-G i tġtQ mvZġU Mġi | G `wġ Mġš<sup>-</sup>i cġZġU Mġi  
wġi tY AġbK Dġzġvġbi | Avi Gi Kġj iel AġbK eo|

(wKvqvZb wġj v we<sup>-</sup>vqvn I qv wġj v wbnvqvn) Mġi GK fġ  
mvaj gġLvk Dġb<sup>v</sup>Pb Kiv nġtġQ| Mġi wU i welqe<sup>-</sup>i mvġ<sup>-</sup> AġbKUv wġj cvl qv hvq  
Avġvġ<sup>-</sup> i evsj vmwġtZ<sup>-</sup>i `mq<sup>-</sup> I qvġj Dj wŋi Ōj vj mvj Ōj mvġ<sup>-</sup>| شهر العسل (kvnia  
Avj -ŌAvQvj) Mġi wU i Kwvub Mġo DġvġQ GK `wġ<sup>1</sup> I KwZcq mšġxi D<sup>o</sup>Q:Lj vġK  
wŋi | G Mġš<sup>-</sup>i tkI Mġi نفيضة في الدور الخامس والثلاثين (bwdhv dx Av<sup>-</sup> i Avj -  
Lwġm I qv AvQ-Qj vQxb) Mġi wU eoB gg<sup>o</sup>šġK| GġZ GKRB w<sup>v</sup>æ<sup>-</sup> e<sup>w</sup> gvbwmK  
Aw<sup>-</sup>i Zvq Amnbxq Pvc wġZ bv tġi cġwġkZjv GKġU `vj vġbi Rvbj v t<sup>-</sup>ġK jvd  
w<sup>-</sup>tq AvZ<sup>v</sup>hZ<sup>v</sup> Kġi |

1973 mġj cġKwġZ nq bwiRe ġvndġRi (Avj -Rwġġv) Mġi Mġš<sup>-</sup>U| GġZ  
i tġtQ GKġU GK `ġk<sup>-</sup>i bvUK I AvUġU Mġi | (Avj -Rwġġv) Mġi  
nZ<sup>v</sup>Kvġġi bġtg cġj tki nġZ Kxfiġe GKRB wġi civa gvbly aġK aġK Kó cvq Zvi  
ü<sup>-</sup>qwe<sup>-</sup>vi K wPġ cġKwġZ nġtġQ|

1979 mġj Zui (Avj -ueġydvI Kv nv<sup>-</sup>vemZ Avj -nviġ) I  
الحب فوق هضبة الهرم (Avk-kvBZvbyBqvŌBh) cġKwġZ nq| (Avj -  
ueġydvI Kv nv<sup>-</sup>vemZ Avj -nviġ) Mġš<sup>-</sup> bwiRe ġvndġRi tiġv<sup>v</sup>UK gġbi cwiPq tġtj |



Zui tivgvUKZvi ^eikó" ntjv GUv ev`eZv ueeiRZ bq| tcô-fvtj veimv, NvZ-  
côZNVZ, `tLKó, tmB mv\_ Pj gvb Rxeþbi Avb>`-te`bvi uPÎ cvl qv hvq Zui Mtí |  
الشيطان يعظ (Avk-kvBZvbyBqvôBh)Môší ukþi vbg Mí u GK u GK `þk`i bUK |  
Rxeþbi tkl gyþZ©Gþm i uPZ Zui mKj Môší uZub GK Rb cYeší I Zvi ð`xß  
tj LK intmte cövY tiþL tMþQb| cvK Zui Mí ,þjv cotjB tmB tZR`xß gþbi  
cvi Pq cvte|

WZxq cwi t"Q`

tQvUMtí mvgvRK w`K

bvRe gvndR KwZcq KZ@`civqY gvbyl i Pig `wqZnxbZv Avi tjvj g `wofw/i tkl  
cwi Yvg GKRb AvnZ gvbyl i RxebtK Kxfite `weli Kti w`tZ cvti ZviB GKwU  
RxešQwe Ztj GtbtQb nwi Qv Mí wUtz | hv mgvRRxetb GKwU eo `pvsí|

G Mí wUtz iv`li Dci cto \_vKv GKRb AvnZ gvbylK eUvbtvi tKvbtv cPón bv Kti  
mvari Y gvbyl bxi e `kKi fvgKv cij b Kti | Zviv fimv Kti cij tki Dci | wbtRiv  
tKvbtv Sttgj vq RovtZ Piq bv | GKchq `athq eva tfto RbZvi weteK botj I  
cij tki Kvto Zviv Amnvq ntq cto |

cij k, Wv<sup>3</sup>vi Avi G`v<sup>3</sup>Y cZ`tKi wR wR `wqZ; cij tb D`vmbZv Avi lohtšj  
teovRtj Ave<sup>x</sup> \_vKvq tj vKwU GKuzGKuzKti gZi gjL ciZZ nq |

Awfhy WbfvítK dwnbtvi Rb` Giv cZ`tKB tKvbtv tKvbtv fite `vqx | A\_P  
Wbfvi GKB `we evievi ZtjQj tm G G`vKwmtWtUi Rb` `vqx bq | tj vKwU  
AmPZbZvB ZvtK gZi tvti wbtq GtmtQ |

tkl chšl Zvt`i AwfcQb mdj ntqtQ | Wv<sup>3</sup>vti i wPwKrmvq weo<sup>3</sup>bv Avi wPwKrmvq  
Mwvdj wZ ZvtK gZi gjL tvtj w`tZ eva` ntqtQ | mdj ntqtQ Zvt`i mvrvtbv  
cwi Kí bv | wbt`<sup>3</sup>xtK t`vix mve`KiY Avi AvnZ e`w<sup>3</sup>tK Kó t`evi ga` w`tq dvq`v  
nwmj KivUvB Zvt`i tgvyg KvR | GK\_vv cQvY tgjt, gyt<sup>3</sup>Ae`vq cij k KZR.  
AvnZtK eUvbtvi cwi etZ<sup>3</sup>Zvi ctKU Zj wkl | nwmZtq wbtqtQ Pritkv cÁvk UvKv | hv  
t`tK wKozUvKv ti tLto Wv<sup>3</sup>vi dI Rx tmvj vBgvbtvi Rb` | KviY dI Rx tmvj vBgvbtvi  
Dbz wPwKrmv (?) ZvtK bv tdivi t`tk cwmvtq w`tqtQ |

mvmqK Avj -wKZve ev tij Wbfvi Mtí bvRe gvndR ^`tvPvix kmtKi weiat<sup>x</sup> k<sup>3</sup>  
nvZ wj Lwb aviY KtítQb | %<sup>3</sup>tkvmtKi Ztjy mgvtj vPbv KtítQb wZwb G Mtí |  
GKRb gvZvj tij Pvj K AwZ `šZ MwZtZ tij Pvj vq, tKvbtv t÷k<sup>3</sup> tm tij \_vgt"Q  
bv, Kvtiv K\_vl tm Mln` KtítQ bv | GKmgq tij i hvixiv wect`i AvksKvq Aw`i ntq  
eUvvi Rb` cwmj civv ntq Dtv | GfiteB bvRe gvndR GB Mí wUtz GKRb  
%<sup>3</sup>tkvmtKi fqvj ifc Ztj ati ZrKvjxb mvgvRK Ae`vi wPw cKvk KtítQb G  
Mí wUtz |

ehj v Avj -Avmxi Z\_v e`xi tcvkvK bvmRe gvndzRi Amæe myi GKU tclgi Mí |  
UíRmWgj-K G MíU `viaFvte cvKtK AvKó.Kti | RvKvRK t÷kbi mmMtiU  
uetµZv Rvnmv| bgl qvi ifc-íms`h©Zvi Ašti fvtj vevmvi tXD tZvtj | bgl qvtK tm  
tRvi Kti tctZ PvB| KviY, bgl qv ZvtK fvtj vevtm bv| fvtj vevtm Avj ,i tK|

Rvnmvi gtb wmsmv nq Avj ,i tK ubtq| tm Zvi GKgvî cñZððx| bgl qv ZvtK  
cĹ`vL`vb Kti tQ Zvi Kvi tY| KviY, Zvi fvtj v PvKvi AvtQ| tRšj m cKvk Kivi gZv  
fvtj v tcvkvK cti tm| Gme tm tgb ubtZ cvti bv| tm ubtRI Avj ,tii gZv ntZ  
Pvq| Zte tm bgl qvtK tctZ cvti GB Zvi vekm|

GKw b GB RvKvRK t÷kb Zvi Rb` `via GKUv mshvM Gtb t`q| Avj ,tii gZv  
mvRv GLb Zvi Rb` mgta e`vcvi | mšj Zvi mmMtiU| kĪactyi nvtZ e`x BZvj xq  
`mubtKi t\_ tK mmMtiUi weibgg R`vtKU, c`vU meB tRvMvo Kti tdtj | evk \_vtK  
tKej GKtRvov RjZv|

Gme cti ZvtK cv°v BZvj xq `mubtKi gZv j vMtQ| Rvnmv Zvi tclgKvtK cvevi Rb`  
ubtRi Ae`vb t\_ tK mevKQzKti tQ| tkl chšl tm tctqtQ etj tUi AvNvZ| Avi  
AcĹ`vKZ gZz| tUíbi tMtU `wvbtv mk` ; chixiv gtb Kti tQ tm Zvt`i nvtZ e`x  
cj vZK BZvj xq `mubK| bvmRe gvndz GB Mtí GKtKw`K tclgi GKUv ev`éZv Ztj  
ati tQb|

bvmRe K\_vmvntZ`i GK Agimyo Zvi tQvUMí | Zvi tmB Kvj Rqx mjoí GKU DrKó.  
D`vniY Avj -gĹvng MíU| mvgvRK w`K wepPbv Kij MíU ubðqB ,i tZi `ve  
ivtL| MíU tZ ubt`v l©DcKvi civqY gby`ZmæubæGKRb mPZb gvby tK t`v l x etj  
mve`ÍKti AvBtbi gšLvgv `w Kivbtv ntqtQ|

AvnZ Avqv` Avj -Rvdi tK evPvtbvi Rb` GvMtq Avtm Avj x ggvv| NUbv`tj i cvkêZP  
gvvti KIK`j gtb Kti Avj x ggvvi Mmo tZB Pi g AvnZ nq Avqv` Avj -Rvdi x| Avj x  
gvv gvigtLv KIKt`i Kvi tY Avfhy UíB WbfvvtK thgb aitZ cvti ub tZgb AvnZ  
Avqv` Avj -Rvdi xi tKvbtv wPvKrmvi e`e`v l Kitz cvti ub| Dtén KIK`j G NUbvi  
Rb` ZvtK `vqx tfté AvUK Kti | Zvi Dci nvtj covi AvfcĹtq tZto Avtm| tm  
ubtRtK evPvtZ w`j tei Kti |

GKchPq tdtm hvq Avj x ggvv| ntq hvq `vqx| GLb AvnZ Avqv` Avj -Rvdi xB Zvi  
fi mv| tmB ej tZ cvite tm mW`Kvti i t`v l x wK bv|

NUbv`tj cny k Avi G`v`j Y Avmtj I mZ` AbyvUtbi tKv`bv cPón tbB Zv`i |  
Avj x gny Avi I fxZntq hvq cny tki AvPiY t`tL | tm ubtRtK `rfweK ivLvi tPón  
Kti | tm G-I cõvY Ki tZ Pvg Avig hw` Awfhy nZvg Zvntj cny tq thZvg ubõqB |  
wKš`cny k Avdmv`ti i Reve Zv`K nZevK Kti |

tm D`Mõe ntq hvq Avj x gnyvi Ae`v Rvbi Rb` | cny k Avdmv`ti i Kv`Q tclv Gtj v,  
tPv`L-gtL Zvi weRtqi nvm | thtnZzAvqv` Avj -Rvdx Avi tbB |

õnvhv Avj -Kibõ Mí wU bvrRe gvndtRi tmiv Mí ,tj vi gta` Ab`Zg | GuU mgv`Ri DpZ  
`t`i i gvbly ,tj vi `b`b Riebhc b I Zv`i cmi emi K, mvgvRK I ivR%õwZK  
Ave`ni GKwU wPÎ Rxeš`ntq aiv w`tqtQ | GB Mí wU weiq-%wP`Î i w`K t`tK Zvi  
Acivci Mí ,tj v t`tK wKQ`v e`wZpugl etU | GLv`b GB kZv`xi PgrKvi GKwU tclg  
Kv`vub ubtq Mí wU | GQovv | AwfRvZ cmi evi ,tj vi wfZi j`yKtq `vKv bv-Rvbi A`bK  
Kv`vub | D`v G`tm`Q |

civk I Zvi `x Mfxi ivZ Aewa Kve Avi AvCvq N`ji teovq | `RtbB g`i t`kva  
Av`Qba`v`K | emotZ Acifcv my`ix tg`q j`jy tm emotZ GKv | g`bi gvb`j i miv`  
Pv`tq tclg Kti | Zvi tclgK GKRB miKvix Avdmvi | th c`Uv Zv`i i Kv`Q tbnv`tqZ  
mvgv`B | GKRB gš`x I Zvi `xi `wotZ tm d`wKi Qovv Avi wKQz`q |

GKv`b j`jy tclg m`v civb Kti cij v`bvi mgq cny tki nvtZ aiv cto hvq h`KwU |  
gš`x gnv`tqi evnev tctZ Zv`K nvmRi Kiv nq civk mvg`b | cny k cõvY Ki tZ Pvg  
tm tPvi | tm etj - Avig tPvi bB, G emoiB tjvK | civk G inm`tf` Ki tZ cv`i bv |  
Aet`k`l G in`m`i Riv D`tbwPZ nq Zi`Yi gwbe`v`M cvl qv j`jy Qve t`tL |

civk meiwKQzGwotq hvq | tm Dcw`Z Kv`iv Kv`Q aiv w`tZ Pvg bv | GgbwK Zvi w`Bfvi i  
Kv`Q | civk tevSv`Z Pvg h`KwU gvZvj | t`kvi tNv`i Av`evj -Zv`evj eK`Q | civk Zvi  
gtL i Kv`Q GwM`q g`i MÜ i K`Q | G t`tL ti`M hvq w`Bfvi | tm etj D`v, th ub`RB  
gvZvj tm Kxv`te A`b`i g`i MÜ cv`te | G K`vq civk fxLY ti`M hvq Avi Zv`K Nvo av`v  
w`tq cõmv` t`tK tei Kti t`q | PvKwi nviq w`Bfvi |

j`jy tR`i i Kv`Q ciwRZ nq civk | civk fq cvq cwi`Kv ,tj v`K | `xi we`ac`l i b`Z nq  
Zv`K | GKRB Qq cvDÜ teZbavix tKivbx miv`\_ civkvi tg`qi we`q ntj cwi`Kv ,tj v ubõqB  
bxie`v`K`te bv | ZvB civkvi `xi cxovc`mo Zvi Rv`gvZv`K nivB Kw`kb; hw` Zv bv nq Kgc`jy  
miv`te i GKUv PvKwi cvB`q w`tZ |

civk mei`3 nq Zv`Z | civkvi `x ti`M etj Z`g tZv w`Q`j mvgv` GKRB tKivbx | Avgvi eev  
tZvgv`K tU`b Z`j`Q |

PZZ©Aa`vq

i ex`bv\_ VvKzi i KtqKwU tQvUMti i chqj vPbv

†`bv cvl bv

ivgmy`ti i cU tQti i ci hLb GKwU tqtq mšrb ntjv wZwb AvZ Av`i Kti Zvi bvg  
ivLtb b ubiæcgv| ubiæcgv i weevni cŕle Avm†Z j vMj | ivgmy`i wKQzZB g†bi  
gZb cvĪ tRvMvo Ki†Z cvi†j b bv| Aetk†l e†bw` estki Nti ivqevn`†i i tQti †K  
L†R tei Ki†j b| Ggb cvĪ †Kv†bvg†Z nrvZovon Ki†eb bv etj B eict†yi `k nrvvi  
UvKv cY Ges euj `vbmvgMŕ w†ZI i vR ntq tM†j b|

weevni w`b ubKueZ†ntjv| A†bK Kó Kti nrvvi wZ†bK UvKv tRvMvo Ki†j b| Pov  
m†y` GKRB emK UvKv w†Z m†y` ntj l mgqKv†j Zvi Avi †`Lv wqjj bv| weevn  
g†tc Zqjy tMjy †hvM Avi†c ntjv| ivgmy`i ivqevn`†i i n†Z-cv†q ati ej†j b,  
ŕi fKvh†m†úbenBqv hvK, Avng ubŕqB UvKvUv †kva Kw†qv †`e|ŕ ivqevn`†y ej†j b,  
ŕUvKv n†Z bv-cv†j ei gfv`Kiv hv†e bv|ŕ

Ggb Kv†† †`†L Nti i w†Z†i Kv†c†o tMj | beea† fve† k†iK†j i cŕZ g†v†Z†K  
Akŕv ü`†q `v†v et††Z j vMj |

nVv ei D†V ejj, ŕ†Kbv†ePr-`i`v†gi K\_v Avng ey† bv, weevn Kw††Z Avm†v†Q  
weevn Kw††qv hvBe|ŕ

ivqevn`†y tQti i GB e`env†i Amšŕ ntq hv†K †`L†j b Zv†KB ej†j b, ŕ††L†Qb  
gn†kq, AvRK†y Kv† tQti †`i e`env†i|ŕ Zvi K\_v i†b `† GKRB c†xY †jvK†l ej†Z  
j vM†j b, ŕKv`†k†y†v b†wZ†k†y†v G†Kev†i bvB, Kv†RB|ŕ weevn GKc†K†i m†úben†jv|

k†ienv†o hve†i mgq e†v ubiæcgv†K e†K tU†b evc Avi †P†Li Rj ivL†Z cvi†j b  
bv| ubiæwRÁvm Kij, ŕZvi v wK Avi Av†v†K Avm†Z †`†e bv, e†v|ŕ ivgmy`i ej†j b,  
ŕ†Kb Avm†Z †`†e bv gv| Avng †Zv†K w††q Avme|ŕ ivgmy`i ten†vBem††Z hvb wK†B  
P†Ki †jv ch†† Zv†K w†Pz†R†i †`†L| Nti i w†Z†i i GKUv i††g tqt††K †Kv†bw` b  
cU w†††U†i Rb` †`L†Z cvb, †Kv†bw` b cvb bv|

AvZ††qi Ggb Acg†v ml qv hv†q bv| ivgmy`i ZvB w`i Ki†j b th K†iB tr†vK UvKvUv  
†kva Ki†Z n†e| I w††K cvl bv`vi†`i `w†c\_ Gov†Z w††Z n†`Q b†v†v †K†Kj | DV†Z-  
em†Z w†Zv†K w††q KZ iKg †Lw†v-w†v`v i†b Ak†emR† w††Z n†`Q k††v†††q

tqtqK | Mvj -g>` Avi wv`v` i bZ i bZ e`vci Lvbv Ggb gtb n`Q eai- thb GLv b  
 tKv bv Avkvi bvB | dK w` tq G Mtn AvkQ wbtqQ |  
 ivgmy`i Gme i bZ tctq wbtRi emZwFuv wewi tPov KiZ j vMj b | wKŠ` e`vci Uv  
 tQj t` i wku nZ tMvcb ivLvi h\_vmva` tPov KiZ b | tQj iv Rvbj | mKj Gtm  
 KuZ j vMj | cEj AvciE` gL AvciZZ emno wewi t\_tg tMj | wia`cgv evci gly  
 t` tL me eS`Z cvij | thnZztgtqi KvQ evc Acivax tm Aciva tm Kx w` tq  
 j kvte? wia` me eS` evcK mš`v t` evi Rb` w` b KZtKi Rb` evci emno thZ  
 Aaxi nZ DVj | evci Ggb glyLv bv t` tL tm Avi `fi \_vKZ cvij bv | GKw` b  
 ivgmy`i iK ej j , ōever, AvgtK GKevi emno j Bqv hv l | ō ivgmy`i ej tj b, ōAv`Qvō |  
 wbtRi tqtqi Dci wZvi th` fveK Avkvi AvQ Zv thb cYi UvKvi KvTY eÜK  
 ti tLQb | gvtSgta` Kb`vi t` tLv tm l AvZ mstKvP wfyv PvBZ nq, mgq wtkl  
 wivk nZ l wZxqevi K\_v ej vi gly \_vK bv | tqtq Avcb emotZ AvmtZ PvBj eev  
 ZvK Kxfvte bv Gtb cvti | G th GK w` l g hš`y | ZvB eü ywZ` fKvi Kti ivgmy`i  
 wZb nvRvi UvKv mš`v Kti tQb |  
 tenvBtqi emotZ wMq eü Mvj Mí KiZ b | cvovi G Lei tm Lei tKv bv wKQB ev`  
 ivLj b bv | Aetk`l tenvB ōKvU bv wgtq ti tL ej tj b, ōnunutenvB, tmB UvKvUv emK  
 AvQ etU | tivRB gtb Kvi | hv`Q Agv nbZ Kti wKQzbtq hvB wKŠ` mgqKv`j gtb  
 \_vK bv | Avti fvB, eš`ov nZ ctoōQ | ō wZb nvRvi UvKvi tlvU t` tL ivqevn`y  
 AEnvm` Kti DVj b | ej tj b, ō\_vK, tenvB, l Z Avgvi KvR tbB | ō  
 ivgmy`i AtbK`y Pz Kti t` tK tqtqi Avbri cñ`w Zj`j b, ivqevn`y tKv bv  
 Kvi Y D`j l bv Kti ej tj b, ōtm GLb n`Q bv | ō GB etj KvR Pj tMj b | gtb gtb  
 ivgmy`i cōZÁv KiZ b, hZw` b bv mg` l UvKv tkva Kti AmstKvP tqtqi Dci `we  
 Zj`Z cvi`eb ZZw` b Avi tenvBemno hvteb bv |  
 eüw` b tMj l tjvK Dci tjvK cvw`q Lei w` tj ivgmy`i Avi l emotZ Avtm bv |  
 ivgmy`i i gtb eo AvNvZ j vMj | thnZzZvi tqtq eo Kó cvt`Q |  
 Aetk`l ivgmy`i `b`cwoZ Avcb Mtni μ` ba`w Kv`b j tq tenvBemotZ XKj b |  
 AvR Avi tKv bv mstKvP bvB, j ¾v bvB | tm thb Avcb Mtn cōek Kti tQ | i bZ b,  
 ivqevn`y Nti bvB, wKQ`y A`c`y KiZ nte | gtb th D`Qm etq Pj tQ Zv bv nRg  
 KiZ tcti ivgmy`i Kb`vi mvt` t` Lv KiZ b | Avb` `yPvL w` tq Rj cotZ

j vMj | evcl Kt̃, tqtqI Kt̃; `BRt̃bi tKnB Avi K\_v ej tZ cvti br| Gevi  
 ivgmyi ej t̃j b, ōGevi tZvt̃K ũbt̃q hvr̃Q gv| Avi tKvt̃bv tMvj bvB|ō  
 ivgmyi em̃o ũem̃u Kt̃i t̃Qb| t̃Qj iv ũKQz̃ZB Rvbt̃Z br cvti Zvi mg̃yq ẽẽv Kiv  
 m̃t̃Ēj Zviv ũKKB tRt̃b tMj | Zvi tR̃ōc̃ỹ nit̃gmb ej j, ōever, Avgvt̃` i Zte Gevi  
 ct̃\_ f̃im̃t̃j ?ō ivgmyi c̃P̃D ti t̃M ũM̃t̃q ej t̃j b, ōt̃Zvgvt̃` i Rb̃` ũK Aṽng bi KM̃vgx  
 ne| Avgvt̃K tZviv Avgvi mZ̃` cij b Ki t̃Z ũ̃e tb ?ō  
 ũbiãcgv mg̃`lẽṽcvi eS̃t̃Z t̃ct̃i ej j, ōever, Z̃ng h̃w̃ Avi GK c̃qm̃v Avgvi k̃ĩi t̃K  
 `vl, Zṽnt̃j Avi tZvgvi t̃qt̃q̃K t̃`L̃t̃Z cvte br| GB tZvgvi Mv Q̃t̃q ej j |ō  
 ivgmyi ej t̃j b, ōũQ gv, Agb K\_v ej t̃Z tbB| Avi G UvKvUv h̃w̃ Aṽng br ũ̃ t̃Z c̃m̃i  
 Zṽ nt̃j tZvi eṽt̃ci Ac̃gvb, Avi tZvi I Ac̃gvb|ō  
 ũbiãej j, ōUvKv h̃w̃ `vl ZteB Ac̃gvb| tZvgvi t̃qt̃qi ũK tKvt̃bv gh̃P̃v tbB| Aṽng  
 ũK t̃Kej GKUv UvKvi \_w̃j, hZ̃ỹY UvKv Aṽt̃Q ZZ̃ỹY Avgvi `vg br ever, G UvKv ũ̃ t̃q  
 Z̃ng Avgvt̃K Ac̃gvb K̃t̃iv br| Zv Q̃vov Avgvi `ṽgx t̃Zv G UvKv P̃vb br|ō  
 ivgmyi ej t̃j b, ōZṽ nt̃j tZvgvt̃K th̃t̃Z t̃`te br gv|ō ũbiãcgv ej j, ōbv t̃`q tZv Kx  
 Kĩte et̃j v| Z̃ng| Avi ũbt̃q th̃t̃Z t̃P̃t̃qv br|ō ivgmyi t̃qt̃qi K\_v ti t̃L UvKṽm̃n  
 t̃P̃ṽt̃i i g̃t̃Zv m̃st̃M̃ṽct̃b em̃ot̃Z ũct̃i t̃M̃t̃j b| ever-t̃qt̃qi GB K\_v Avi t̃M̃ṽcb iBj  
 br| GK\_v ĩt̃b ũbiãi k̃ṽĩw̃i Aṽt̃m̃ṽt̃ki Avi m̃xgv iBj br| G̃w̃ t̃K Zvi `ṽgx ũet̃qi  
 Ãĩ ũ̃ t̃bi gv\_vq t̃Wc̃ỹj g̃̃m̃R̃t̃ ÷ ũ̃ nt̃q ũet̃` t̃k P̃t̃j ũM̃t̃q̃Qb| m̃x̃ū̃t̃Z m̃sm̃M̃t̃` ṽt̃l  
 ñxbZv ũk̃ỹv nq GB I R̃t̃i eṽt̃ci em̃oi AṽZ̃k̃q̃t̃` i m̃ṽt̃\_ ũbiãi m̃ṽỹvr G̃t̃Keṽt̃i ũb̃w̃l ×  
 nt̃q̃t̃Q|  
 G mg̃t̃q ũbiãi GKUv \_iãZi ti ṽM̃ nt̃j v| KviY, GB ms̃`vi Zvi g̃tb ex̃gj- nt̃q̃w̃Qj  
 tm-t̃h ct̃i i Ñt̃i i `vm̃`vm̃x Ges Act̃i i Ab̃M̃ōni Dci ũbf̃P̃ K̃t̃i em̃ Kĩt̃Qb| ZvB  
 Aṽrṽi-`ṽrṽt̃i tKvt̃bv ũKQz̃ZB Zvi gb ũQj br| Gme Zvi cx̃ovi GKgṽĪ KviY nt̃q  
 `w̃vj | m̃ṽt̃\_ Ab̃`vb̃` ti ṽM̃-ẽ`w̃al G̃t̃m R̃t̃ov nt̃j v| t̃i ṽM̃ hLb \_iãZi nt̃q DVj k̃ṽĩw̃o  
 ej t̃j b, ōI ũ̃ mg̃`l b̃ṽK̃ṽng|ō Aet̃k̃t̃l GK̃w̃ b ũbiãi k̃ṽĩw̃ot̃K ej t̃j b, ōever̃t̃K Avi  
 Avgvi f̃ṽB̃t̃` i GKevi t̃`Le gv|ō k̃ṽĩw̃o ej t̃j b, ōt̃Kej eṽt̃ci em̃o h̃ṽBevi Qj |ō  
 ōt̃Kn eij t̃j ũek̃ōm K̃w̃ĩte br-t̃h̃w̃ b m̃Ü̃vi mg̃q ũbiãi k̃ōm Dc̃w̃`Z nBj, tmB̃w̃ b c̃ġg  
 W̃ṽ³vi t̃`w̃Lj Ges tmB̃w̃ b W̃ṽ³ṽt̃i i t̃`Lv t̃kl nBj |ō em̃oi eo eD g̃t̃i t̃Q g̃nṽag̃ṽt̃g  
 Zvi Ãt̃š̃ĩw̃ō̃m̃qv t̃kl nt̃j v| ivgmyi t̃K m̃ṽš̃p̃ṽ t̃`evi mg̃q Zvi t̃qt̃qi th ũKĩãc

gnvmgvtivtn gZžntqtQ, mKtj B Zvi eYĐv w`tj v| ivqevnv`j cŷtK wj Ltj b, ōever,  
tZvgvi Rtb“ Avi GKwU tgqti mαŪ Kwi qwQ, AZGe Anej tα^ QwU j Bqv GLvfb  
Avmtē/Ō Gerfi nek nvRvi UvKv cY Ges nvZ nvZ Av`vq|



## tcv÷gv÷vi

cŏg KvR Avi ðKti tcv÷gv÷vi ðK Dj vcy Mŏtg AvmðZ nq| MŏguU AvZ mvgvb" | Gi  
tcv÷gv÷vi Kwj KvZvi tQj | GB AR cvovMŏq Gtm tcv÷gv÷vi ðK `viaY wecð`  
cotZ nq| tm Kvi l mvt\_ wgtZ cviðQ bv| ZvQvov Kwj KvZvi tQj iv Kvðiv mvt\_  
fvjv Kti wgtZ Rvðb bv| AcwiwPZ `vðb tMj nq D×Z bq AcŏZF nðq \_vðK|  
A\_P Zvi nvtZ tKvðv KvR tðB| KLðv KLðv `ðv-GKuv KwZv wj LtZ tPŏv Kti b|  
tcv÷gv÷vði teZb AvZ mvgvb" | wðRðK titð tLðZ nq Avi Mŏgi GKwU  
wZgvZnx Abv\_v evwj Kv Zvi KvRKgðKti t`q, weibgtq tm Pwi wU-Pwi wU tLðZ cvq|  
bvq Zvi iZb| eqm evðiv-tZðiv| wevðni weðkl mððebv t`Lv hvq bv|  
mŏvi mgq Nði tKvðY GKwU ýxy wklv cŏxc tRðj tcv÷gv÷vi WvKðZb ŏiZbŏ|  
iZb ŏvði Gtm GB WvðKi Rb` Aðcyv KiðZ \_vKZ wKš' GK WvðKB Nði AvmZ bv;  
ej Z- ŏKx Mv eveyðKb WvKQ|ŏ  
iZb `w Mvj dñj ðq gvbðei AvÁv cvj b Kti Kvj Kvq dym ðZ w ðZ tcv÷gv÷vði i  
Nði cðek Kti | tcv÷gv÷vi ZvðK wRÁmv Kti, ŏAvQv iZb, tZvi gvðK gðb cto ?ŏ  
tm AðbK K\_v; KZK gðb cto, KZK gðb cto bv| gvðqi tðq evc ZvðK tewk  
fvjvevmZ, evcðK Aí Aí gðb cto| cwi kŏ Kti evc mŏvðej vq Nði wðvði AvmZ|  
ZviB `yGKwU Zvi gðb cwi®vi Qwei gðZv AwðZ AvðQ| Gfvðe K\_v ejðZ ejðZ  
mðgB iZb tcv÷gv÷vði cvðqi KvðQ gvUðZ eðm coZ| Avi gðb KiZ Zvi  
tQvUfvðqi K\_v eð cte®tKvðv GK elð w ðb Zviv `ðv wgtQwQ MvðQi Wvj ðK  
wQc Kti gvQaiv tLjv KiZ| tcv÷gv÷vi bxiðe tmB Nði eðm cwiðZb tQvUfvðB, gv  
Ges w w i K\_v| th K\_v bxj Kwðv tMvg ðð` i KvðQ tKvðvgtZB ejv hvq bv, tmB K\_v  
GKwU AwkwýZv ýžª evwj KvðK etj hvðZb| evwj Kv KðvcKðvbKvðj Zvi Nði i  
tjvKw MðK gv, w w etj wPiciwi wPwzi b`vq Dðj L KiZ| GgbwK ýžª ü` qctU evwj Kv  
Zvð` i Kví wðK gwZ® GðK wðqwiQj |  
GKw b elðKvðj tcv÷gv÷vði nvtZ KvR wQj bv| PgrKvi elð w ðb tcv÷gv÷vi  
cKwZðK t`LwQj Avi fvewQj GB mgðq KvðQ GKwU tKn wðZvš'Avcb tjvK \_vKZ|  
tcv÷gv÷vi GKwU `xNðkðm tðj WvKðj b ŏiZbŏ iZb ZLb tcqvivZj vq cv Qwðq  
Kvðv tcqviv LwvQj; cðž KÉ iðb Awj ðª` QðU Avmðjv-nwvðZ nwvðZ ejj ,  
ŏv`veveyWvKQ ?ŏ tcv÷gv÷vi ej ðj b, ŏZvðK Avwg GKUzGKUzKti cotZ tkLve|ŏ

etj mg'í` gyttejv ZvtK j tq 0`fi A0 0`fi Av0 Ki tj b| Aí w` tbi gta` iZb hÿ  
 Ayi DËXYñtjv|  
 GKw` b mKij ntZ ewó nw`Qj | tcv÷gv÷vii QvTx iZb AþbKÿY `iRvi KvQ  
 Aþcÿv Kti etm wQj | wKŠ' Ab`w` tbi gþZv WwK i`bþZ bv tctq wþR Lwzcyw wþq  
 axti axti Nti c0ek Kij | wZwb LvUti Dci i`tq AvþQb t` tL iZb frej wZwb nek0g  
 KiþQb ZvB cÿivq tei ntZ PvBj | ZLb i`bj 0iZb0| ZvovZvwo wdti wMtq ejj ,  
 0`v`veveyNtgnw`Qj ?0 tcv÷gv÷vi KvZi `fi ej tj b 0kixiUv fvþjv teva nt`Q bv t`L&  
 tZv Avgvi Kcvtj nvZ w`tq|0  
 ewij Kv iZb Avi ewij Kv iBj bv| tm Rbbxi ghP`v Awakvi Kti emj | `e` tWtK  
 ejj , h\_vmgþq ewUKv LvlqvBj , mvivivZ wqti tRtM iBj , c\_` titã wj Ges  
 evi evi Kti wRÁvmv Kij , 0nctMv `v`veveyGKUzwb fvþjv teva nt`Q wK|0  
 eüw` b ci tcv÷gv÷vi ÿxY kixti tiwMkh`v Z`vM Kti DVþj b- gþb gþb wK Ki tj b,  
 GLvþb Avi bq| `vbxq A`v`i K\_v Dþj L Kti Kwj KvZvq KZ0þÿi wþKU e`w` i  
 Rb` `iLv`iKi tj b| iZb Avevi l Ntii ewnti | cteP` gþZv Avi WwK cto bv| gvþS  
 gvþS Dwk tgti t` tL tcv÷gv÷vi AZ`š'Ab`gb`fvþe tPŠwKþZ etm A\_ev LvU i`tq  
 AvþQb| iZb hLb Avnÿvþbi cZ`vkv Kti etm AvþQ, wZwb ZLb AvKþfvþe `iLv`fi  
 DËþii Rb` cZxÿv KiþQb| iZb nvRvþiv evi `iRvi evBþi etm Zvi cÿþbv cov  
 coj | Aetkþl mBvLvþbK cþi GKw` b mÜ`vþejvq WwK coj | iZb gnvAvM0n Ntii  
 gta` c0ek Kij , 0`v`veveyAvgvþK WwKwQj ?0  
 tcv÷gv÷vi ej tj b, 0iZb, Kij B Avng hww`Q|0  
 iZb| tKv\_vq hv`Q `v`vevey  
 tcv÷gv÷vi | emwo hww`Q|  
 iZb| Avevi Kte Avmþe|  
 tcv÷gv÷vi | Avi Avme bv|  
 AþbKÿY Avi tKn tKvþbv K\_v ejj bv| Ntii wFZi c0xc Rþj tZ j vMj Ges Ntii  
 Pvjvi wQ` w`tq GKwU gvwUi mivi Dci Uc Uc Kti ewó cotZ j vMj | iZb ivbwnþi  
 iaw MoþZ tMj | Ab`w` tbi gþZv AvR Avi PUctU þbB| ewij Kv ZvtK wRÁvmv Kij ,  
 0`v`veveyAvgvþK tZvgvþ`i emwo wþq hvþe ?0 tcv÷gv÷vi tnþm ej tj b, 0þm Kx Kti  
 nþe ?0 e`vciUv th Kx Kx Kv iþY Amæe Zv ewij KvþK ewþtq ej tj b bv|

mg<sup>-</sup>l i v<sup>l</sup> <sup>-</sup> t<sup>c</sup>æ Ges Rv Mi t<sup>Y</sup> evij Kvi K<sup>v</sup> t<sup>b</sup> t<sup>c</sup>v ÷ t<sup>g</sup>v ÷ v<sup>i</sup> i n<sup>v</sup> m<sup>l</sup> a<sup>v</sup> i<sup>b</sup> i KÉ<sup>-</sup> t<sup>l</sup> ev R t<sup>Z</sup>  
j v<sup>M</sup> j , 0 t<sup>m</sup> Kx K<sup>t</sup> i n<sup>te</sup> | 0

t<sup>f</sup> v<sup>i</sup> t<sup>D</sup> t<sup>c</sup>v ÷ t<sup>g</sup>v ÷ v<sup>i</sup> t<sup>-</sup> L t<sup>j</sup> b Z<sup>v</sup> i t<sup>-</sup> t<sup>b</sup> i R<sup>j</sup> v<sup>W</sup> K A<sup>v</sup> t<sup>Q</sup> | t<sup>-</sup> t<sup>b</sup> t<sup>k</sup> l n<sup>tj</sup> i Z<sup>t</sup> b i v<sup>W</sup> K  
c<sup>o</sup> j | c<sup>f</sup> z<sup>e</sup> j t<sup>j</sup> b , 0 i Z<sup>b</sup> , A<sup>v</sup> g<sup>v</sup> i R<sup>v</sup> q<sup>M</sup> v<sup>q</sup> t<sup>h</sup> t<sup>j</sup> v<sup>K</sup> u<sup>J</sup> A<sup>v</sup> m<sup>t</sup> e<sup>b</sup> Z<sup>v</sup> t<sup>K</sup> e<sup>tj</sup> v<sup>l</sup> t<sup>q</sup> h<sup>v</sup> e ,  
v<sup>W</sup> t<sup>Z</sup> v<sup>t</sup> K A<sup>v</sup> g<sup>v</sup> i B g<sup>Z</sup> b h<sup>Z</sup> a<sup>K</sup> i t<sup>e</sup> b ; A<sup>v</sup> m<sup>g</sup> h<sup>v</sup> v<sup>Q</sup> e<sup>tj</sup> t<sup>Z</sup> v<sup>t</sup> K v<sup>W</sup> K<sup>o</sup> z<sup>f</sup> v<sup>e</sup> t<sup>Z</sup> n<sup>te</sup> b<sup>v</sup> | i Z<sup>b</sup>  
c<sup>f</sup> z<sup>l</sup> A<sup>t</sup> b<sup>K</sup> v<sup>Z</sup> i t<sup>-</sup> v<sup>i</sup> b<sup>x</sup> i t<sup>e</sup> m<sup>n</sup> K<sup>i</sup> t<sup>j</sup> l A<sup>v</sup> R<sup>t</sup> K<sup>i</sup> G<sup>B</sup> b<sup>i</sup> g<sup>K</sup> v<sup>l</sup> t<sup>j</sup> v<sup>l</sup> m<sup>n</sup> K<sup>i</sup> t<sup>Z</sup> c<sup>v</sup> i j  
b<sup>v</sup> | G<sup>t</sup> K<sup>e</sup> v<sup>t</sup> i D<sup>Q</sup> m<sup>Z</sup> ü<sup>-</sup> t<sup>q</sup> t<sup>K</sup> t<sup>i</sup> D<sup>t</sup> v<sup>l</sup> e<sup>j</sup> j , 0 b<sup>v</sup> b<sup>v</sup> , t<sup>Z</sup> v<sup>g</sup> v<sup>i</sup> K<sup>v</sup> D<sup>t</sup> K v<sup>W</sup> K<sup>o</sup> z<sup>e</sup> j t<sup>Z</sup> n<sup>te</sup> b<sup>v</sup> ,  
A<sup>v</sup> m<sup>g</sup> v<sup>l</sup> K<sup>t</sup> Z P<sup>v</sup> B t<sup>b</sup> | 0 t<sup>c</sup>v ÷ t<sup>g</sup>v ÷ v<sup>i</sup> i Z<sup>t</sup> b i G<sup>g</sup> b e<sup>-</sup> e<sup>n</sup> v<sup>i</sup> K<sup>L</sup> t<sup>b</sup> v<sup>l</sup> j y<sup>l</sup> K<sup>t</sup> i b<sup>v</sup> | Z<sup>v</sup> B A<sup>v</sup> R  
A<sup>e</sup> v<sup>K</sup> n<sup>tj</sup> b | b<sup>Z</sup> b t<sup>c</sup>v ÷ t<sup>g</sup>v ÷ v<sup>i</sup> A<sup>v</sup> m<sup>j</sup> | h<sup>v</sup> e<sup>v</sup> i m<sup>g</sup> q i Z<sup>b</sup> t<sup>K</sup> t<sup>W</sup> t<sup>K</sup> e<sup>j</sup> t<sup>j</sup> b , 0 i Z<sup>b</sup> ,  
t<sup>Z</sup> v<sup>t</sup> K A<sup>v</sup> m<sup>g</sup> K<sup>L</sup> t<sup>b</sup> v<sup>l</sup> v<sup>W</sup> K<sup>o</sup> z<sup>v</sup> t<sup>Z</sup> c<sup>v</sup> i i<sup>b</sup> | A<sup>v</sup> R h<sup>v</sup> e<sup>v</sup> i m<sup>g</sup> q t<sup>Z</sup> v<sup>t</sup> K v<sup>W</sup> K<sup>o</sup> z<sup>v</sup> t<sup>q</sup> t<sup>M</sup> j g<sup>l</sup> , G<sup>t</sup> Z  
t<sup>Z</sup> v<sup>i</sup> v<sup>l</sup> b K<sup>t</sup> q<sup>K</sup> P<sup>j</sup> t<sup>e</sup> | 0

v<sup>W</sup> K<sup>o</sup> z<sup>c</sup> L<sup>i</sup> P<sup>v</sup> e<sup>v</sup> t<sup>-</sup> t<sup>e</sup> Z<sup>t</sup> b i e<sup>n</sup> v<sup>K</sup> m<sup>e</sup> U<sup>v</sup> K<sup>v</sup> c<sup>t</sup> K<sup>U</sup> n<sup>t</sup> Z t<sup>e</sup> i K<sup>i</sup> t<sup>j</sup> b | Z<sup>L</sup> b i Z<sup>b</sup> a<sup>j</sup> v<sup>q</sup>  
c<sup>t</sup> o Z<sup>v</sup> i c<sup>v</sup> R<sup>v</sup> o<sup>t</sup> q a<sup>t</sup> i e<sup>j</sup> j , 0 v<sup>-</sup> v<sup>e</sup> v<sup>e</sup> y<sup>t</sup> Z<sup>v</sup> i g<sup>v</sup> i v<sup>l</sup> v<sup>l</sup> c<sup>v</sup> t<sup>q</sup> c<sup>v</sup> i o , t<sup>Z</sup> v<sup>g</sup> v<sup>i</sup> v<sup>l</sup> v<sup>l</sup> c<sup>v</sup> t<sup>q</sup> c<sup>v</sup> i o ,  
A<sup>v</sup> g<sup>v</sup> t<sup>K</sup> v<sup>W</sup> K<sup>o</sup> z<sup>v</sup> t<sup>Z</sup> n<sup>te</sup> b<sup>v</sup> ; t<sup>Z</sup> v<sup>g</sup> v<sup>i</sup> v<sup>l</sup> v<sup>l</sup> c<sup>v</sup> t<sup>q</sup> c<sup>v</sup> i o , A<sup>v</sup> g<sup>v</sup> i R<sup>b</sup> K<sup>v</sup> D<sup>t</sup> K v<sup>W</sup> K<sup>o</sup> y<sup>f</sup> v<sup>e</sup> t<sup>Z</sup> n<sup>te</sup>  
b<sup>v</sup> | G<sup>K</sup> v<sup>l</sup> e<sup>tj</sup> G<sup>K</sup> t<sup>-</sup> t<sup>š</sup> t<sup>o</sup> t<sup>m</sup> L<sup>v</sup> b n<sup>t</sup> Z c<sup>v</sup> i j t<sup>q</sup> t<sup>M</sup> j |

t<sup>c</sup>v ÷ t<sup>g</sup>v ÷ v<sup>i</sup> v<sup>l</sup> b<sup>k</sup> t<sup>m</sup> t<sup>d</sup> t<sup>j</sup> m<sup>e</sup> v<sup>W</sup> K<sup>o</sup> z<sup>m</sup> v<sup>t</sup> v<sup>l</sup> b<sup>t</sup> q a<sup>x</sup> t<sup>i</sup> a<sup>x</sup> t<sup>i</sup> t<sup>b</sup> t<sup>š</sup> K<sup>v</sup> v<sup>f</sup> g<sup>g</sup> t<sup>l</sup> P<sup>j</sup> t<sup>j</sup> b | h<sup>L</sup> b  
t<sup>b</sup> t<sup>š</sup> K<sup>v</sup> Q<sup>v</sup> i o<sup>q</sup> v<sup>l</sup> j Z<sup>L</sup> b G<sup>K</sup> U<sup>v</sup> t<sup>e</sup> b<sup>v</sup> A<sup>b</sup> t<sup>f</sup> e K<sup>i</sup> t<sup>Z</sup> j v<sup>M</sup> t<sup>j</sup> b - G<sup>K</sup> u<sup>J</sup> m<sup>v</sup> g<sup>v</sup> b<sup>v</sup> e<sup>n</sup> v<sup>i</sup> j K<sup>i</sup> a<sup>l</sup>  
g<sup>l</sup> v<sup>Q</sup> i e t<sup>h</sup> b G<sup>K</sup> v<sup>e</sup> k<sup>e</sup> v<sup>c</sup> x e<sup>p</sup> r A<sup>e</sup> v<sup>3</sup> g<sup>g</sup> e<sup>-</sup> v<sup>l</sup> c<sup>K</sup> v<sup>k</sup> K<sup>i</sup> t<sup>Z</sup> j v<sup>M</sup> j | G<sup>K</sup> e<sup>v</sup> i Z<sup>v</sup> i B<sup>Q</sup> v<sup>l</sup>  
n<sup>tj</sup> v<sup>l</sup> v<sup>l</sup> d<sup>v</sup> i q<sup>v</sup> h<sup>v</sup> B , R<sup>M</sup> t<sup>Z</sup> i t<sup>l</sup> v<sup>l</sup> o<sup>i</sup> e P<sup>z</sup> t<sup>m</sup> B A<sup>b</sup> v<sup>l</sup> b<sup>x</sup> t<sup>K</sup> m<sup>t</sup> 1/2 K<sup>v</sup> i q<sup>v</sup> j B<sup>q</sup> v<sup>l</sup> A<sup>v</sup> m<sup>l</sup> | 0 Z<sup>L</sup> b  
t<sup>b</sup> t<sup>š</sup> K<sup>v</sup> t<sup>Q</sup> t<sup>o</sup> e<sup>u</sup> t<sup>-</sup> i P<sup>tj</sup> G<sup>t</sup> m<sup>t</sup> Q | 0 b<sup>-</sup> x<sup>c</sup> e<sup>v</sup> t<sup>n</sup> f<sup>v</sup> m<sup>g</sup> v<sup>b</sup> c<sup>v</sup> v<sup>l</sup> t<sup>K</sup> i D<sup>-</sup> v<sup>m</sup> ü<sup>-</sup> t<sup>q</sup> G<sup>B</sup> Z<sup>t</sup> E<sup>j</sup>  
D<sup>-</sup> q n<sup>B</sup> j , R<sup>x</sup> e<sup>t</sup> b G<sup>g</sup> b K<sup>Z</sup> v<sup>e</sup> t<sup>Q</sup> , K<sup>Z</sup> g<sup>z</sup> z<sup>l</sup> A<sup>v</sup> t<sup>Q</sup> , v<sup>l</sup> d<sup>v</sup> i q<sup>v</sup> d<sup>j</sup> K<sup>x</sup> | c<sup>v</sup> v<sup>l</sup> e<sup>x</sup> t<sup>Z</sup> t<sup>K</sup>  
K<sup>v</sup> n<sup>v</sup> i | 0

e<sup>n</sup> v<sup>i</sup> j K<sup>v</sup> i g<sup>t</sup> b e<sup>v</sup> i e<sup>v</sup> i G<sup>B</sup> K<sup>-</sup> v<sup>i</sup> D<sup>-</sup> q n<sup>v</sup> v<sup>Q</sup> j - v<sup>-</sup> v<sup>e</sup> v<sup>e</sup> y<sup>h</sup> v<sup>l</sup> v<sup>l</sup> d<sup>t</sup> i A<sup>v</sup> t<sup>m</sup> | t<sup>m</sup> G<sup>B</sup> g<sup>v</sup> q<sup>v</sup>  
t<sup>-</sup> t<sup>K</sup> v<sup>W</sup> K<sup>o</sup> z<sup>Z</sup> B t<sup>-</sup> t<sup>i</sup> m<sup>i</sup> t<sup>Z</sup> c<sup>v</sup> i v<sup>Q</sup> j b<sup>v</sup> |

## mŷv

tgŷqŷi biŷ mŷvŷl bx| Avmŷj tm tever| Zvi `ŷ eo tevb mŷKŷk bx mŷvŷmbx| ZvB  
ŷgŷj i KviŷY evc Zvi biŷ i vŷL mŷvŷl bx| mKŷj ZvŷK mŷv etj WŷK| eo `ŷ tgŷqi  
ŷetq nŷq tMŷQ| tQvU tgŷqŷi GLb ŷcZŷvŷv Zvi Kŷta tevSv nŷq iŷqŷQ| mKŷj B Zvi  
fŷel `r mŷúŷK<sup>©</sup> ŷŷŷ Kŷi | tm th ŷeavZvi AwfKŷv ŷkiKŷj nŷZ tm K\_v tm eŷZ|  
tm mKŷj i ŷbKU t\_ŷK ŷbŷRŷK Avovj KiŷZ PŷBZ| ZvŷK mevB fŷj hŷK GUvB Zvi  
Kŷgbv ŷQj | Zeytm me mgq ŷcZŷvŷv gŷb RvMiŷK ŷQj | gv ZvŷK Zvi fŷj i KviY  
etj gŷb KiZ| ŷKŷ' mŷvi evel evYxKÉ Ab` tgŷqŷ' i Zŷbvq ZvŷK GKUztemk  
fŷŷj vevmZ| ŷKŷ' gv Zvi cŷZ eoB ŷei<sup>3</sup> | KviY G Zvi Mŷfŷ<sup>©</sup> Kj ¼|  
mŷvi K\_v ŷQj bv| ŷKŷ' eo eo mŷ i `ŷ Kŷŷj v tPŷL ŷQj | Zvi gŷ K\_v ej ŷZ PŷBŷj  
tVŷW KŷP ŷKŷj ŷqi gŷZv tKŷc DVZ|  
evK`nxb gvŷŷj i gvŷS cŷKŷZi gŷZv GKUv ŷeRb gnÉj AvŷQ| GRb` mŷaviY  
evj Kevŷj Kŷiv ZvŷK GKcŷvi fq KiZ| Zvi mŷ\_ tLj v KiZ bv|  
Mŷŷgi biŷ Pŷxcj| GB Mŷŷgi tgŷq mŷv| GB Mŷŷgi wŷZi w`ŷq etq Pŷj ŷQ Zŷŷ b`x|  
Gi `ŷ avŷi i mKŷj i mŷ\_B Zvi thb GKUv-bv-GKUv mŷúŷK<sup>©</sup>AvŷQ|  
evYxKŷÉi Ni GŷKevŷiB b`xi DcŷiB| GB mŷv hLŷb KŷRKŷg<sup>©</sup>Aemi cŷq ZLbB tm  
GB b`xZŷi Gŷm etm| cŷKŷZ. thb Zvi fŷlvi Afve cŷY Kŷi t`q|  
`ŷŷj hLb gmSiv tRŷj iv LvBŷZ thZ, Mŷŷ`iv NgŷvZ, cvLŷv WŷKZ, tLqv tŷŷKv eÜ  
\_vKZ, ZLb GKŷU tever cŷKŷZ. Ges GKŷU tever tgŷq gŷŷvŷv Pz Kŷi \_vKZ-GKRb  
mŷe`ŷYŷiŷŷ`<sup>a</sup>AvŷiKRb ŷŷ<sup>a</sup>Ziaŷvŷvq|  
i fvi ŷŷUKŷZK Aŷŷi ½ eÜŷŷj | tMŷqŷj vi `ŷ Mŷfŷx| meRŷ I cvŷŷj | tm biŷ mŷvi  
gŷL Zvŷv KLŷbv tkŷŷb bvB| ŷKŷ' Zvŷv Zvi cvŷqi kã ŷPbZ| Zvi K\_vnxb GKUv Kiŷ  
mŷ ŷQj | Zvi gg<sup>©</sup>Zvŷv fŷl v Aŷcŷv mŷŷR eŷZ| mŷv KLŷbv Zvŷ' i Av`i KiŷQ,  
KLŷbv frmbv KiŷQ, KLŷbv ŷgbŷZ KiŷQ, Zv Zvŷv gvŷŷj i Aŷcŷv fŷŷj v eŷZ|  
mŷv hLb Nŷi tKŷŷbv KŷWb K\_v i bZ tmw`b tm Amgŷq Zvi GB ü`ŷqi tever Kó eÜz  
`ŷŷi mŷ\_ tkŷqi KiZ| Zvŷv Zvi Kó eŷZ| mŷvi Mv tNŷl Aí Aí Zvi evŷŷZ ŷks  
Nŷl Nŷl ZvŷK mŷŷŷv w`Z| Bŷv Qvovl QŷMj I ŷeovj kvetŷKi mŷ\_ mŷvi `gŷx| Zŷe  
GZUv bv|

Dbz tkŃyi Rxtai gta" mŃvi Avi I GKuU m½x uQj | Dftqi gta" mgfvlv uQj bv |  
thtnZztm uQj fvlweukó | tm ntjv tMuvBt`i tQvU tQtj cŹvc | ubZvšAKgP | tm  
th tKvŃbv uKQzKti msmvŃi i Dbuz Kite tm Avkv evc-gv eũ AvtMB tQto w`tqtQ |  
cŹvtci cäv b kL uQj uQc w`tq gvQ av | BvŃZ AŃbKuv mgq mntR KvUŃbv hvq |  
vetKtj GB Dcj tÿ mŃvi mŃ\_ Zvi cŹqB t`Lv nZ | cŹvc AwZwi<sup>3</sup> Av`i msthvM  
Kti mŃvŃK ŃmŃyetj WvKZ |

mŃv tZŹZj Zj vq eŃm \_vKZ Ges cŹvc AbvZ`ti gvUŃZ uQc tdtj RŃj i w`tK tPtq  
\_vKZ | cŹvtci GKU Kti cvb eivx uQj, mŃv Zv ubŃR mŃvRŃq AvbZ | Zvi gb PvBZ  
tml hv` cŹvtci tKvŃbv KvŃR AvmŃZ cviZ | hv t`tL cŹvc AvŃhŃntq thZ Avi  
ej Z Avgt`i mŃvi I jÿgZv AvtQ Zv tZv RvbZvg bv |

mŃvi eqm mtgB teto DŃvŃQ | tm- I AvcbvŃK Avcb AbŃe Kitz cviŃQ | Gw`tK  
Kb`vfvMŃ`ucZvgvZv uPvšZ nŃq DŃvŃQ | tjvŃKl ub>`v AvicKtiŃQ | GgbvK GK-  
NŃi Kite Ggb Rbiel tkv bv hvq | evYxKŃÉi m"Qj Ae`v | GRb" Zvi kŃaŃ Kg uQj  
bv | uKQz tbi gta" evbxKÉ`xi mŃ\_ civgkKti vet`tk tMtj b |

BvZgta" GKw`b vetKtj RŃj uQc tdtj cŹvc tnŃm ej j, ŃKx ti mytZvi bŃvK ei  
cvi qv tMtQ, ZB vetq Kitz hv"Ńm ? t`uLm, Avgt`i fŃj m&tb/Ń etj Avevi gvŃQi  
w`tK gbŃhŃM Kij |

GK\_v iŃb mŃv cŹvtci w`tK ZvKvq | tmw`b MvŃQi Zj vq Avi emj bv | evYxKÉ NŃ  
nŃZ DŃv ŃkvevNŃi ZvgvK Lw"Ńtj b | mŃv Zvi cvŃqi KvŃQ eŃm Zvi gŃLi w`tK  
ZvŃtq KŃtZ j vMj | AetŃtŃ ZvŃK mŃšbv w`tZ uMtq evYxKŃÉi i`KŃcvŃj AkŃ  
MŃotq coj |

KvŃ KvZvq hvevi w`b w`i ntj mŃv tMvqj NŃi Zvi ejj`mLŃ`i KvŃQ ve`vq j BŃZ  
tMj | Av`i Kij | ZvŃ`i gŃLi w`tK PvBj - `Ń tPvL nŃZ Uc Uc Kti AkŃRj coŃZ  
j vMj |

KvŃ KvZvi GK evmŃq mŃvi gv mŃvŃK LŃ Kti mŃvRŃq w`tj b | `vfvmeK kŃ h\_vmva"  
vej Ń Kti w`tj b | mŃvi `ŃtPvL w`tq AkŃ coŃQ | cvŃQ tPvL dtj Lvivc t`LŃZ nq,  
GRb" Zvi gv AŃbK frmbv Kitz b | uKš`AkŃRj frmbv gvŃj bv |

eÜznt½`Ńs ei Ktb t`LŃZ AvmŃj b | AŃbKŃY ubixŃY Kti ej tj b, Ńg>` bŃn/Ń  
evŃj Kvi μ>`b t`tL eŃtj b BvŃi ü`q AvtQ, Ges wŃmve Kti t`LŃj b, th-ü`q AvR

ercgv̄tqi wef"Q`m=tebvq e"u\_Z n̄tq DV̄tQ tmB ü`q AvR evf` Kvj Av̄gviB e"enit̄i  
j vM̄tZ cv̄ti |

weevn n̄tq tM̄j | teven t̄ḡt̄q̄t̄K c̄ti i n̄v̄t̄Z mgc̄P̄ K̄ti ercgv̄ t`tk P̄t̄j t̄M̄t̄j b-Zv̄t` i  
Rv̄wZ I ciKij īȳv n̄t̄j v| m̄BvL̄v̄t̄b̄t̄Ki ḡt̄a" m̄K̄t̄j B eS̄j , beea-̄teven| tm K̄v̄n̄v̄t̄KI  
c̄Z̄vi Yv K̄ti bv̄B, Zvi `̄t̄v̄ t̄P̄vL me K\_vB et̄j t̄Q| w̄K̄š' t̄KnB tevt̄S bv̄B| t̄m  
P̄m̄i w̄ t̄K P̄vq-f̄v̄l v cv̄q bv| hv̄i v teveni f̄v̄l v eS̄Z tmB AvRb̄t̄c̄w̄i w̄PZ ḡy , t̄j v t`L̄t̄Z  
cv̄q bv|

Gevi Zvi `̄t̄ḡx t̄P̄vL I K̄vb Ø̄v̄i v cīx̄ȳv K̄ti GK f̄v̄l w̄enkó Kb"v weevn K̄ti Av̄t̄j b|

## Qut

erc giv tQij diUK | etb-euivto Nji teovtbn hvi `fve | GKvR tmKvR mviw`b KZ  
uKQB-bv Kti teovZ tKvfbvUvB KvRi KvR bq | gvLb Avi diUK `B fvB | mviw`b  
Gi uctQ I tj tMB \_vKZ | euw`b ci nek<sup>4</sup> eveyAvmtj b tevbi emotZ | tevbcj i  
covtkvbn I gvbwmK DbwZ m<sup>u</sup>uK<sup>c</sup>ck<sup>a</sup>Kti RvbZ cvi tj b diUtKi D`Q:Lj Zv, cvtV  
AgfbvthvMi Lei | Avi gvLtbi mkyšmkyj Zv I ue`vbvMi weeiY |

fvmfbq th tevbi nvogvk Rvuj tq QvotQb nek<sup>4</sup> eveyZv fvtjv Kti estj b | ZvB  
uZvb cŕve Kitj b diUKtK Kuj KvZvq vbtRi KvQ ti tL gvby Kivi | tevbtg  
cŕite iWR ntj b diUKI tZgb hvevi Rb` j vudtq DVj | diUKtK ue`vq w`tZ Zvi  
gvi tKvfbv AvciE uQj bv, KviY uZvb gvLbtK vbtq eo PwšZ uQij b | KLb diUK  
gvLtbi gv\_v diUvq, KLb Rtj tdtj t`q GB vbtq | gvgv ZvtK KLb Kuj KvZvq vbtq  
hvte GB Kti Kti Av`i ntq DVj |

Kuj KvZvq gvgvi emno Dtv gmgv mvt\_ Avjvc ntj v | uZvb cvv evti i GB bZb m`m`  
ewxZ gtb gtb Lg GKUv mšb ntZ cvi tj b bv | GgvbtZB uZvb uZb uZbtU tQij  
vbtq NiKvbe tctZ etm AvtQb | Zvi mvt\_ tZtiv eQti i AcviiPZ AvkiryZ GKUv  
cvovMta tQij tQto w`tj Kx th GK uectei m<sup>v</sup>tebv m<sup>o</sup> nq G vbtq `yŕšiq cto  
tMtj b | `vgtKI Mvj g` Kg Kitj b bv | GZ eqm ntj v, ZeyKvDÁvb ntj v bv |  
gmgv KvQ tm th At`tni cvtŕ cvvYZ ntqtQ GtZ Zvi Lg jvMZ | Zeygmg hv  
tKvfbv KvR KitZ ej tZb, Zvntj tm gtb Avbt` hZUKZKiv`iKvi Zvi tPtq tenk  
Kti tdj Z tKej gmg<sup>t</sup>K Ljk Kivi Rb` | GtZI gmg iVM KitZb | KLtbn ej tZb,  
I tZ Avi tZvqvq nvZ w`tZ nte bv | GLb Zvg vbtRi KvR gb `v | vbtRi cov  
ctov | ZLb Zvi Lg Kó ntZv |

Nti i gta`i Ggb Avv`ti i gvbwmK Akvšt`tK GKUzc<sup>k</sup>všjvf Kivi nek<sup>i</sup> tKvfbv  
iv`il uQj bv Zvi, hvZ tm GKUznud tQto evbtZ cvti | t`qvij i gta` AvUKv cto  
diUtKi tKej Mŕgi K\_v gtb coZ |

`zj diUtKi gtZv GZeo vbtv<sup>8</sup> Avi AgfbvthvMx evj K Avi uZxqvU uQj bv | GKUv  
K\_v vRtÁm Kitj tm nuKti tPtq \_vKZ | bxi te gv÷vti i gvi nRg KiZ | tQij t`i  
hLb tLj evi Qut ntZv ZLb Rvbj vi KvQ `votq `ti i emno, tj vi Qv` t`LZ | hLb

tmB `gxi tiv`i gta" tKvtrv GKUv Qvt` `w GKUW tQvj tqtq wKQzGKUv tLj vi Qvj  
 wKQzYi Rb" t`Lv w`tq thZ Zvi gb Aaxi n`q DVZ |  
 GKw`b A`bK mvmn Kti gvgv`K wR`Am Kij , ōgvgv, gvi Kv`Q Kte hvte|ō gvgv  
 etj wQvj b, ō`vj i Qw tnvK|ō  
 dñUK GKw`b `vj i eB nmi`q tdjj | G`K tZv mntR cov nq bv| Zvi Dci eB  
 nmi`q tePvrv Ly teKvq`vq cto tMj | gv÷vi cñZw`b gvi`avi Avi Acgvb Ki`Z  
 jvMtb| `vj Zvi gvgv`Zv fvB`qv Zvi cwiPq w`tZ j ¾vteva KiZ| A`b`i tP`q  
 Zvi Acgv`b ZvivB tek Avb>`tcZ |  
 GKw`b eva" n`q gwv`K ejj , ōeB nmi`q tdj wQ|ō gwv Ggbfvte gly evKv Kti  
 ej tj b, ōtek KtiQ, Avig tZvgv`K gv`mi gta" cñPvri Kti eB wKtb w`tZ cwi tb|ō  
 dñUK Avi wKQzov etj P`j Avmj | tm th cti i cqmv bó Ki`Q GB gtb Kti gv`qi  
 Dci fwi Avf`gvb n`j v| j ¾v I `wi `Zv Zv`K gwvgi Kv`Q eob tQvU Kti w`j |  
 `vj n`Z w`ti tmB iv`ZB Zvi gv`ve`\_v Ki`Z jvMj | eS`Z cvij , Zvi R`i  
 Avm`Z`Q| Zvi R`i Avm`j gwv th Zvi cñZ Kxifc AvPiY Ki`te Zv tm Dcj wä Ki`Z  
 cvij | tm th Zvi gv Qvov Ab" Kv`iv tmev cvB`Z cv`i Zv Kvgbv Ki`Z tm j ¾vteva  
 Kij | ciw`b dñUK`K Avi t`Lv tMj bv| Pmiw`K tLURLei Kti Zvi tKvtrv müvb  
 wvj bv| tKv`vl bv tctq nek`ē eveycv`k Lei w`j |  
 mü`vi mgq `BRb cv`k ki tjvK Mvmo n`Z dñUK`K bwv`q nek`ē evej mvg`b nmiRi  
 Ki`j b| Zvi cv t`K gv`v chS`wFRv, mvi vMv`q Kv`v, tPvL-gly jvj n`q tM`Q, \_i&i &  
 Kti K`w`Q| nek`ē evejKv`j Kti Zv`K Nti i w`Zi w`b`q tM`j b|  
 gwv Zv`K t`tL etj DV`j b, ō`Kb evcycti i tQvj`K w`b`q `Kb G Kg`FvM| `vl  
 I`K evmo cvM`q `vl |ō  
 dñUK tKti DVj , ōAvig gvi Kv`Q hvw`Qj gy, Avgv`K w`mi`q G`b`Q|ō dñU`Ki R`i te`to  
 tMj | gvgv wPvKrmK Avb`j b| cñP R`i i gv`S dñUK ejj , ōgvgv, Avgvi Qw n`q`Q  
 wK|ō  
 nek`ē evej`v`j tPvL g`Q m`-`ñ dñU`Ki tivMv nvZLw`b n`Zi Dci Z`j w`b`q Zvi  
 Kv`Q G`m em`j b| ciw`b w`b`i te`j v wKQzYi Rb" Avb w`ti tctq dñUK Kvi I  
 cñ`vkvq d`vj d`vj Kti Nti i Pmiw`K P`Bj | w`ivk n`q Avevi i`q iBj | nek`ē evej  
 Zvi g`b`i AvKw`Z eS`Z cvi`j b| Zvi Kv`bi Kv`Q gly w`b`q ej tj b, ōdñUK, tZvi



gv#K Avb#Z cvM#q#Q|Ō nek#eveyd#U#Ki cv#k e#m cŌZ gv#ZB d#U#Ki gv#qi Rb"  
A#c#y#v Ki#Z j vM#j b| Ggb mgq d#U#Ki gv tR#i tk#K c#K#k K#i N#i X#j b,  
Ōd#U#K, tm#v#v! gvmbK Av#v#i !Ō gv Ave#i W#K#j b, ŌI #i d#U#K, evcab ti !Ō d#U#K Av#-  
Av#-Ícvk #d#i Kv#KI j #y b#v K#i ej #Z j vM#j , Ōgv, GLb Av#v#i Q#U# n#q#Q gv, GLb  
Av#v#i emo h#v#Q|Ō

# GKiwi

evj `Kvj t\_#KB mjevji mvt\_ brq#Ki Mfxi fve| mjevji gv Zv#K eoB Av`i-hZæ  
Ki#Zb| Avi `Rb#K GKÎ K#i #b#RB ej #Zb, 0Avrv `#Z tek gvbrq|0  
brqK G K\_vj gvtb bv e#tj I mjevji Dci #b#Ri AwaKvi LvUvZ| Zv#K KZ th  
kymb, KZ th Dc`è KiZ Zvi tkl tbB| cvovq Zvi i#ci c#skv\_vKtj I eeP  
evj #Ki tPvtL tm i#ci tKv#v K`i #Qj bv| tm tKej RvbZ Zvi c#Z; `Kvi Kivi  
Rb`B Zvi Rb#ntq#Q| tm Zvi Kv#Q Aetnjvi cvÎ #Qj |  
brq#Ki B#`Q #Qj Kv#tj #ti i b#Ri nevi | Zv bv ntj RR Av`vj #Zi tnWK#K nte|  
Zvi KviY, tm t`LZ me#vB Zvi evc D³ AvBbR#x#` i AZ`š m#yb Ki#Zb| GB  
Kvi#Y Zv#` i m#ú#K#gb GKUv D`P avi Yv R#b#`#Qj |  
Zv#` i cvovi bxj iZ#bi `#v#š D¾#eZ ntq GK mgq #Zvb| Kvj KvZvq cvij tq  
t#tj b| Aa`vqb i iæ Kitj b| covtkv#v #bq#Z Pj #Z j vMj | gvtSgta` mfv  
m#g#Z#Zi thvM #`Zb| nVv Zvi Kv#Q g#b ntjv t`tki Rb` c#Y #emR# t`qv  
Avek`K| Zv#` i tbZviv e³Zv #`Zb| Avi Zviv P#v LvZv j Bqv bv tL#q `#tj i  
mgq tiv#` gv#tj i 0vti 0vti tUv #Uv KiZ| iv`#i cv#k `#otq #eAvcb #evj KiZ|  
`j cvZi bvtg tKD GKUv ev#R K\_vj ej tj tKvgi teta gv#v#i Ki#Z D`Z ntZv|  
knti i tj #Kiv Gme j #Y t`tL Zv#` i ev#vj ej Z|  
b#Ri tm#i `#` vi ntZ G#m gvU#v#b M#vi evj #v nevi Av#qvRb Ki#Z j vMj b| Ggb  
mgq mjevji #cZv Avi brq#Ki #cZv GKgZ ntq mjevji mvt\_ brq#Ki #etqi Rb`  
D`gx ntq DV#tj b| G#`K brqKI g#b g#b c#ZAv Kij AvR#eb #etq bv K#i  
`#`tki Rb` gi#e| evc#K ej #tj b, covtkv#v #kl bv K#i #etq Kie bv|  
GK mgq brq#Ki Kv#Q Lei G#jv mjevji D#Kj i vgtj vPbevj mvt\_ #etq ntq t#t#Q|  
t`k tmevi Av#t#R G Lei Zvi Kv#Q Z#Q etj g#b ntjv| Gb#U#&cvk Kivi ci  
dv÷ AvU# #`te Ggb mgq #cZvi gZ# ntjv| msmv#i Zvi gvZv Avi I `#v#v tev#  
Av#Q| K#j R tQ#o Kv#Ri Z#M#` bl qvL#vj #efv#Mi GK#U tQvU knti Gb#U#&`#j i  
tm#K#U gv÷ #vi c#` P#K#i #Z X#K cotj b|  
g#b g#b fve#tj b, Avgvi Dch# KvR ntq#Q| Drm#v #`tq GK GK#U Qv#`K f#v#  
fvi#Zi GK GK#U t#b#v#Z K#i Z#e|

GK mgq eStZ cvi tj b, fvev fvi Ze t l P tmbvciuz nevi tPtq GMRmgtb Zvov Zvt` i  
 A t b K teuk | Ov t t` i t K M g v i A` v j t R e t i ev B t i t K v t b v K \_ v e j t j t n W g v ÷ v i i v M  
 K t i b | g v m ` t q t K i g t a` Z v i D r m v n K g t Z j v M j |  
 A v , t b i A v k s K v q G K R b K t i g v ÷ v i ` t j i N t i t Z e v m K i Z | t m G K v n l q v q t m f v i  
 c o j Z v i D c i | N i u l i P r i w` t K m g v n i b v i t K j I g v` v t i i M v Q | ` t j N t i i K v t Q B ` t j U v  
 u e k v j e x u b g M v Q |  
 G L v b K v i m i K v i i D u K j t m B i v g t j v P b i v q | ` t j N t i i K v t Q B Z v i e v m v | Z v i m v t \_ Z v i  
 ` t j - b v q t K i e v j ` m L x m j e v j v u Q j |  
 G K v` b O u l i w` t b i v g t j v P b e v e j e v m v q Z v i m v t \_ m v j v r K i t Z u M t q t Q b v q K | G g b  
 m g q c v t k i N t i A Z ` s l g , y G K U z P r o i U s u l i s , K v c t o i G K U z m b L m L m G e s c v t q i I  
 G K U z m b k a` i b t Z t c t j b ; t e k e S t Z c v i t j b R v b j v i d u k w` t q t K v t b v t K S Z n j c Y ©  
 t P v L Z v t K f v t j v K t i t` L t Q |  
 e v m v q u d t i A v m t j b | t m B e` \_ v g o j b v | t j L v c o v h v K t i b v t K b u K O z z B g t b i f v i  
 ` t - n q b v | g t b i g a` n t Z D E i A v m j , t Z v g v i t m m j e v j v t K v \_ v q t M j |  
 t m c u Z D E t i e j j , A v m g t Z v Z v t K B t` Q K t i t Q t o w` t q u Q | h v B t` Q K i t j B t c t Z  
 c v i t Z G L b g v \_ v L t o g i t j I Z v t K G K e v i t P v t L t` L e v i A v a K v i U K z c v t e b v |  
 t m e j j , \_ v K & b v , m j e v j v A v g v i t K |  
 D E i i b j , m j e v j v A v R t Z v g v i t K n B b q , u K S` m j e v j v t Z v g v i K x b v n t Z c v i Z | t m  
 A v R G Z ` t , G Z c i , A v R Z v t K t` L v u b t l a , Z v i m v t \_ K \_ v e j v t` v l , Z v i u e l t q  
 u P S i K i v c v c | A v i , G K U v i v g t j v P b t K v \_ v l u K O z v B n v v r G t m D c w` Z , t K e j t M v U v  
 ` t q K g l y` g s ; c t o m j e v j v t K c u \_ e x i A v i - m K t j i u b K U n t Z G K g y t Z` t O u t g t i  
 u b t q t M j | i v g t j v P t b i A v o t j t h m j e v j v u e i v R K i t Q t m t h i v g t j v P b A t c j v t e u k  
 K t i Z v i G K \_ v t m g b n t Z u K O z z B Z v o t Z c v t i b v | G i j c u P S i u b Z v s i A m s M Z G e s  
 A b` v q Z v ` t K v i K v i | u K S` A` v f v e K b t n |  
 G L b n t Z t K v t b v K v t R g b t m s t h v M K i t Z c v t i b v | ` t j i O u l n t q t M t j e p r N t i Z v i  
 G K j v g b u K Z b v | t K D t` L v K i t Z A v m t j I A m n` t e v a n t Z v | Z v i g t b n t Z v  
 g b l y` R v Z G K U v R u l j a t g i R v j | u K m g t q u K K v R K i t Z K v i I g t b c t o b v | Z v i  
 c t i t e u k m g t q t e u k e v m b v u b t q A v` i n t q g t i |

tm ubtRB Avtyc Kti, tZvgvi gZv tj vK mjeyj vi tvgx ntq egveqm chš tek mšL  
 \_vKtZ cvi Z; Zvg wKbr ntZ tMj Mwi evj wW Ges ntj tkfI GKwU cvovtMtq tZj i  
 tmKtU gv÷vi | ivgtj vPb tvgw tek mšLB AvtQ| tZvgvi gZv nvûZvk Kti br|  
 ivgtj vPb GKUv eo gKI gvq wKQKvtj i Rb AbT tMtQ| Zvi tZ Nti tml GKjv|  
 mjeyj vl GKv wQj | tmw b tmvgevi AvKvk tgNv Qbq tej v kUv ntZB i iæntqtQ wWc  
 wWc epó| AvKvtki Ae v t tL tnWgv÷vi tZ Qw w tq w tjb| Zvi ciw b wtkj i  
 w tK gtyj avti epó Ges mvt\_ mvt\_ So Avi æntjv| hZ iwî ntZ j wMj epó I Stoi  
 teM tefo Pjj | cŏtg ce w K ntZ evZvm eBtQ, mtg mtg DEi I DEice w K  
 ntZ eBtZ j wMj |  
 gtb coj, GB tM mjeyj v Nti GKjv AvtQ, Avgt i tZ Ni Zvt i Ni Atcyv  
 AtbK gReZ| iwî hLb GKUv t oUv nte nVr evtYi wWk tkvbr tMj -mgÿ QZ  
 AvmtQ| Ni tQto tei ntjv| mjeyj vi emoi w tK Pjj | ct\_ cktz i cvo tm chš  
 thtZ-br-thtZB Zvi nWRj ntjv| cvtoi Dci hLb Dtv wovj ZLb wZxq Avi  
 GKUv Zi ½ Gtm nWRi ntjv|  
 cktz cvtoi GKUv Ask k GMvtiv nvZ Dpnte| cvtoi Dci tml DVj wecixZ w K  
 ntZ Avi I GKwU tjvK DVj | tjvKwU tK Zv Zvi mg AšivZš, gv\_v ntZ cv chš  
 eštZ cvij ZvtZ Zvi m t n brB|  
 mewKQzRtj i gta Wte tMtQ, tKej nvZ cvp Qq ōxtci Dci Zviv w cŏYx Gtm  
 wovj | tKn KvnvtKI GKUyKkj cktæ chš Kij br| GLb tKej AvtiKuv tXD  
 Avmtj B cŏ\_xi GB cŏšUKznTZ w t Q t i GB ešUKznTZ Ltm Zviv w Rtb GK ntq  
 hvq|  
 tm tXD br AvmK | tvgxcÿMnabRb wbtq mjeyj v wPiw b mšL \_vKk| tm GK ivt i  
 gnvcŏ tqi Zvti wbtq Abš Avbt i Av t tctqtQ|  
 iwî cŏq tkl ntq Avmj | So t\_tg tMj, Rj tbtg tMj -mjeyj v tKvbr K\_v br etj  
 emoi Pj tMj, tml tKvbr K\_v br etj Zvi Nti tMj |

## Kvenj I qvj v

cuB eQi eqtmi tQvU tqtq ugub| K\_v bv etj \_vKtZ cvti bv| Zvi gv agK w`tq Zvi  
gly eÜ Kti w`tj I Zvi evel Zv cvti bv| Zvi Pz \_vKv t`LtZ eveli fvtj v j vtM bv|  
ZvB ugub Drmn ubtq eveli mvt\_ K\_v etj Ptj |

tm bvbv Aevši cĕmRtĀm Kti evelK| nVvr wRĀvmv Kti, ōevel, gv tZvgvi tK nq|ō  
gtb gtb Zvi evel ej j, k`vij Kv| gĕL ej j, ōugubō ZB tFvj vi m½ tLj v Ki&tM hv|  
Avgvi GLb KvR AvtQ|ō tm Zvi eveli tj Levi tUetj i cvtk Zvi cvtqi KvQ etm  
AvZ`ĕZ D`Pri tY AvMWg evMWg tLj tZ AvicKij | Zvt`i Ni ct\_i avti | nVvr tm  
tLj v ti tL tRvti WvKtZ j vMj, ōKvenj I qvj v, I Kvenj I qvj v|ō

ggj v wXj v Kvcō civ, cvMno gv\_vq, Sij Nvtō, nvtZ tMvUv `B-Pvi Av½tj i ev. |  
ZvtK t`tL ugubi Kx th Avb>` ntj v| ugubi evel fvej, GLbB Sij Nvtō GKUv Avc`  
Gtm Dcw`Z nte| Avgvi Dcb`vtmi mB`k cwi t`Q` Avi tkI nte bv|

ugubi wPrKvti Kvenj I qvj v tntm gly wlvitq ugubi evno i w`tK AvmtZ j vMj | tm ftq  
Ašt`cjtj t`šo w`j | Zvi Avi wPy t`Lv tMj bv| Zvi gtbi gta` G wekjm wQj Zvi H  
Sij i wFZi mÜvb Kijtj Zvi gtZv`yPv tU RwieZ gube mštb cvl qv thtZ cvti |

ugubi evel ugubtK Ašt`cjtj ntZ tUtB Avtjtj b| Kvenj Sij i ga` ntZ wKmigm tLvenb  
tei Kti ZvtK w`tZ tMj | tm wKQzZB wbj bv| Zvi m>`n Avi I wY ntj v|

ugubi evel cti GKw`b t`Ltj b ugub tetĀi Dci etm AbM<sup>9</sup> K\_v etj hv`Q| Avi  
Kvenj I qvj v Zvi cvtqi wbtP etm nvmgtL Zvi K\_v i`btQ| gvtSgta` Zvi I gZvgZ

e`<sup>3</sup> KtQ| ugub evel Qvov Ggb`ah`evb tkŌZv KLtbv cvq bvB| ugubi evel ej j,  
ŌDnvtK Gme tKb w`qvQ| Agb Avi w`tqv bv|ō ugubi evel ZvtK GKUv Avanj w`tj tm

AmtKvtP MhY Kti Sij tZ cjtj | ugubi evel RvtZ cvitj b G ugubi mvt\_ wZxq  
mvyvr bq| cŌZ`Kw`b Kvenj I qvj v Gtm ZvtK tc`lcv`vg Nly w`tq ugubi jž`ü`qUkz  
AtbKUv Avakvi Kti wbtqtQ|

ingZtK t`Ltj B ugub nvmtZ nvmtZ wRĀvmv KiZ, ōKvenj I qvj v, I Kvenj I qvj v,  
tZvgvi I Sij i wFZi wK|ō ingZ ej Z ōnwZō GB cwi nvtm DftqB tek GKUztKŠZK  
Abfē KiZ| ingZ ugubtK ej Z, ōtLwLx, tZvng mmjeyvno KLbyhvte bv|ō tm Dj wUqv  
wRĀvmv KiZ, ōZng kti i evno hvte ?ō tm ej Z, ōnwig mmjtK gvi te|ō ugub Bnv i`tbB  
Lg nvmZ|

ugubi gv AZ`šl kwiZ `fitei tj vK| ingZ Kvevj I qvj v m<sup>3</sup>U ugub m<sup>3</sup>U<sup>3</sup>btmskq  
 uQtb bv| Zvi cūZ ue<sup>3</sup>kl `wó ivLvi Rb` ugubi ever<sup>3</sup>K Ab<sup>3</sup>va K<sup>3</sup>i uQtb| ugubi  
 ever Zvi mskq tn<sup>3</sup>m D<sup>3</sup>uotq w<sup>3</sup> tj ugub ej tj b, Kvej t`tk uK `vme`emv c<sup>3</sup>ij Z bvB|  
 uek<sup>3</sup>m Kivi k<sup>3</sup> mK<sup>3</sup>tj i mgvb bq| ugubi gvi gtb fq itqB tMj |  
 cūZ eQi gvN gv<sup>3</sup>mi gvSv<sup>3</sup>ms ingZ t`tk Ptj hvq| G mgq mg<sup>3</sup>l cvl bv UvKv  
 Av`vtqi Rb` eo e<sup>3</sup>l`v<sup>3</sup>tK| Zeyugubi m<sup>3</sup>t<sup>3</sup> GKevi t`Lv K<sup>3</sup>i hvq| thw`b mK<sup>3</sup>tj  
 Avm<sup>3</sup>Z cv<sup>3</sup>i bv, tmw`b m<sup>3</sup>U<sup>3</sup>vi mgq Av<sup>3</sup>m|  
 GKw`b mK<sup>3</sup>tj ugubi ever cū<sup>3</sup>umU m<sup>3</sup>tkvab Ki<sup>3</sup>tQb Ggb mgq t`Lj ingZ<sup>3</sup>tK `B  
 cvnvi vI qvj v teta uotq Avm<sup>3</sup>Q| GKRb cvnvi vI qvj vi n<sup>3</sup>tZ i<sup>3</sup>v<sup>3</sup> tQviv uKq`sk Zvi  
 Kv<sup>3</sup>Q Avi uKq`sk ing<sup>3</sup>tZi Kv<sup>3</sup>Q| i<sup>3</sup>tb Rv<sup>3</sup>tj b ivgcj<sup>3</sup> Pr<sup>3</sup>ti i Rb` ingZ GK  
 cūZ<sup>3</sup>tekxi Kv<sup>3</sup>Q uKQzUvKv t<sup>3</sup>cZ uKŠ<sup>3</sup> tm ug<sup>3</sup>t<sup>3</sup> etj tm t`bv A<sup>3</sup>Kvi K<sup>3</sup>i | Zv uotq  
 S<sup>3</sup>Mov K<sup>3</sup>i ingZ Zv<sup>3</sup>tK Q<sup>3</sup> em<sup>3</sup>tq w<sup>3</sup> t<sup>3</sup>q<sup>3</sup>Q|  
 mvsN<sup>3</sup>uZK Av<sup>3</sup>NvZ Kivi Aciv<sup>3</sup>ta ing<sup>3</sup>tZi AvU eQi Kviv`D ntj v| Zvi K<sup>3</sup>v GK c<sup>3</sup>Kvi  
 ugub I Zvi ever I Ab<sup>3</sup>vb<sup>3</sup>ivI f<sup>3</sup>tj tMj | AvR i<sup>3</sup>w<sup>3</sup>l tkl n<sup>3</sup>tZ bv n<sup>3</sup>tZB ueev<sup>3</sup>tni miv<sup>3</sup>vB  
 evR<sup>3</sup>Q| AvR Zvi ugubi ueev<sup>3</sup>n|  
 ugubi ever tj Levi N<sup>3</sup>ti e<sup>3</sup>tm un<sup>3</sup>me t`L<sup>3</sup>tQb| Ggb mgq ingZ G<sup>3</sup>tm m<sup>3</sup>vj vg K<sup>3</sup>i  
 `w<sup>3</sup>vtj v| ugubi ever cū<sup>3</sup>tg Zv<sup>3</sup>tK uP<sup>3</sup>b<sup>3</sup>tZ cvij bv| S<sup>3</sup>ij bvB, j<sup>3</sup> P<sup>3</sup>z bvB, c<sup>3</sup>te<sup>3</sup> g<sup>3</sup>tZv  
 ki<sup>3</sup>ti i tZR bvB| Ae<sup>3</sup>tk<sup>3</sup>l Zvi n<sup>3</sup>im t`L ugubi ever Zv<sup>3</sup>tK uP<sup>3</sup>b<sup>3</sup>tj b|  
 ugubi ever ej tj b, ōAvR Av<sup>3</sup>gv<sup>3</sup> i em<sup>3</sup>otZ GKUv KvR Av<sup>3</sup>Q, Avig uKQze<sup>3</sup>l Av<sup>3</sup>Q, Z<sup>3</sup>ig  
 AvR hvI | ō GK<sup>3</sup>v i<sup>3</sup>tb tm th<sup>3</sup>tZ D<sup>3</sup>z ntj v| `i Rvi Kv<sup>3</sup>Q uM<sup>3</sup>tq GKUz<sup>3</sup>M<sup>3</sup>og<sup>3</sup>im K<sup>3</sup>i  
 ej j, ō<sup>3</sup>L<sup>3</sup>u<sup>3</sup>x<sup>3</sup>tK GKevi t`u<sup>3</sup>L<sup>3</sup>tZ cvBe bv ? ō  
 Zvi gtb uek<sup>3</sup>m uQj , ugub tmB<sup>3</sup>f<sup>3</sup>v<sup>3</sup>teB t<sup>3</sup>Qv<sup>3</sup>E Av<sup>3</sup>Q| tm thb gtb K<sup>3</sup>i uQj ugub Avevi tmB  
 c<sup>3</sup>te<sup>3</sup> g<sup>3</sup>tZv ōKvevj I qvj v, I Kvevj I qvj v ō K<sup>3</sup>i Q<sup>3</sup>U Av<sup>3</sup>te| tm Av<sup>3</sup>Mi g<sup>3</sup>tZv GKev  
 Av<sup>3</sup>zj I Kv<sup>3</sup>M<sup>3</sup>t<sup>3</sup>Ri tgvo<sup>3</sup>tK uKw<sup>3</sup>Ar uK<sup>3</sup>m<sup>3</sup>ig<sup>3</sup>m G<sup>3</sup>t<sup>3</sup>u<sup>3</sup>Qj | tmB S<sup>3</sup>ij uU Avi uQj bv| ugubi ever  
 ej j , ōAvR em<sup>3</sup>otZ KvR Av<sup>3</sup>Q, AvR Avi Kv<sup>3</sup>v<sup>3</sup>t<sup>3</sup>iv m<sup>3</sup>u<sup>3</sup>nZ t`Lv n<sup>3</sup>B<sup>3</sup>tZ cv<sup>3</sup>ii te bv| ō  
 ōvev<sup>3</sup>t<sup>3</sup>m<sup>3</sup>j vg ō etj ōv<sup>3</sup>ti i em<sup>3</sup>ni n<sup>3</sup>tq tMj | ugubi evevi gtb GKUze<sup>3</sup>v Ab<sup>3</sup>ve ntj v| tm  
 u<sup>3</sup>d<sup>3</sup>ti Kv<sup>3</sup>Q G<sup>3</sup>tm ej j , ōGB Av<sup>3</sup>zj Ges uKw<sup>3</sup>Ar uK<sup>3</sup>m<sup>3</sup>ig<sup>3</sup>m ev<sup>3</sup> vg t<sup>3</sup>L<sup>3</sup>u<sup>3</sup>xi Rb` Av<sup>3</sup>u<sup>3</sup>bq<sup>3</sup>u<sup>3</sup>Qj vg,  
 Z<sup>3</sup>iv<sup>3</sup>t<sup>3</sup>K w<sup>3</sup> te<sup>3</sup>b| ō uKŠ<sup>3</sup> tm `vg u<sup>3</sup>bj bv| ej j , ōvev<sup>3</sup>t<sup>3</sup>Zv<sup>3</sup>gvi thgb GK<sup>3</sup>u<sup>3</sup> j oK<sup>3</sup>x Av<sup>3</sup>Q,

tZgub t`tk Avgvi I GKU j oKx AvtQ| Avgv Zivri B gylvmb `ši Y Kvi qv tZivri  
 tLulxi Rb` KQzKQzgtgl qv nvtZ j Bqv Avim, Avgv tZv ml `v Kvi tZ Avim bv| 0  
 GB etj tm Rvgvi wfZi w`tq GK UKiv gqv KVMR tei Kij | ugubi ever t`Ltj b,  
 KVMtRi Dci GKU tQvtUv nvtZi Qvc| dtUvMöd bq, tZtj i Qve bq, nvtZ LmbKUv  
 fznv gvLvBqv KVMtRi Dci Zvi wPy ati wbtqtQ| tqtqi GB `šZwPyUKzešK avi Y  
 Kti cšZeQi Kij KvZvi iv`lq tgl qv tePtZ Avtm|  
 t`tL ugubi everi tPvL Qj Qj & Kti DVj | ZLb tm eštZ cvij, tml th AvgvI tm,  
 tml wczv AvgvI wczv| wfZtii Ni t`tK AšbK AvciE mšEj ugubi ever ugubtK  
 tWtK Avbtj b| ZvtK t`tL Kvenj l qvj v \_ZgZ tLtq tMj, cjtbn Avjvc RgvBtZ  
 Pvbj, 0tLulx0 Zwg mmjvemo hmem ?0  
 ugub Ptj tMj | GKUv `xNwbkjm tdtj Kvenj l qvj v gvUtZ etm coj | tm eštZ  
 cvij Zvi tQvU tqtqU Avt tQvU tBb| Zvi mš½ bZb Kti Avjvc KitZ nte|  
 ugubi ever ingZtK GKlvmb tbnU wbtq ZvtK w`tj b| Avt ejtj b, 0ingZ0 Zwg t`tk  
 tZivri tqtqi KvQ wlvv qv hvI ; tZivgt`i wj bmtL Avgvi ugubi Kj `vY nDK| 0  
 GB UvKvUv `vb Kti wmvve nšZ Drme mgvtivtni `šlv GKUv A½ tQtU w`tZ ntjv|  
 gtbi gtZv Btj KUK Avtj v Ryj vtZ cvij vg bv, Mtoi ev`I Avmtj v bv, Ašctj  
 tqtqiv Amššl cKvk KitZ j vMj, wKš' g½j Avtj vtK Avgvi i f Drme D¾j ntq  
 DVj |

## ej vB

cKwZ. tclgK ej vB| tQtj tejv t\_tKB PzPvc tPtq tPtq t`LvB Zvi Atf'm| cKwZ  
t\_tK cvl qv mxgvnxb Avb>` tRtM Dtv I i it<sup>3</sup>i gta`| cKwZi gb gvZvfbv mj I i  
Ašli cKwZUvK Pviw` K w`tq we`Z.Kti tZvtj | iOb Avbt>` tQtq hvq cjtjv gb| I i  
GKjv efm K\_v KBtZ Bt"Q Kti | Mf evbvq hv wKQzi tbtQ Zv vbtq| A\_ev AwZ cjtjv  
etUi tKvUti evmv erav GK tRvov AwZ cjtjv cvl, te½gv-te½gx Gt` i vbtq|

I tK AtbK tek fvetZ nq| K\_v etj AwZ Kg| I i fvtē tfvjv tPvLuv me mgq  
cKwZi mv\_tj tM\_vtK| m`" MvRtq DVv KvP KvP cvZv, Zvt` i mv\_t I i Kx th GKUv  
eqm`fve Zvl tKgb Kti cKvK Kite| Zvivi I tK Kx GKUv cKwRAvmv Kivi Rb`  
AvKizvKzKti | nqtZv etj, tZvgvi bvg Kx| nqtZv etj, tZvgvi gv tKv\_vq tMj |  
ej vB gtb gtb DEi Kti, Avgvi gv tZv bvB|

tKD MvtQi dz Zztj GUV ej vBtqi eC evtR j vtM| GUV I eStj I Kvtiv KvtQ Zvi  
GB mstKvtPi tKvtbv gvtb tbB| `viæy Kó cvq GtZ| ZvB e`\_vUv j tKvtZ tPóv Kti |  
I i m½xiv I tK L`vciēvi Rb` evMvtbi wfZi w`tq Pj tZ Pj tZ Qwo w`tq `gcvtki  
MvQ,tj vtK gvtZ gvtZ Ptj, dm Kti tKD GKrb eKz MvtQi GKUv Wvj tft½  
tbq| I i KvtZ `viæy ki g j vtM| hvZ tKD cvMj wq bv gtb Kti |

thw`b Nvmqvov Nvm KvUtz Avtm I i `viæy Kó j vtM| GK-GKw`b I i KvkKi tKvtj  
Gtm efm Zvi Mjv Rvotq etj, ōI B NvmqvovtK etj v-bv, Avgvi I B MvQ,tj vtK thb  
bv KvtU|ō Kvk etj, ōej vB Kx th cvMjtj i gtZv evKv| I th me R½j, mvd bv Kijtj  
Pj te tKb|ō

ej vB AtbKw`b t\_tK eStZ tcti wQj, KZK,tj v e`\_v AvtQ hv m<sup>α</sup>úY<sup>9</sup> i GKj vi B I i  
Pviw`tKi tjtKti gta` Zvi tKvtbv mvov tbB| tLvl qv t`qv iv`li gvSLvfb GKUv  
wkgjMvtQi Pvi v DtvTQ| ej vB gnv AvMŃn KvKvtK mv\_t Kti vbtq ejj, KvKv, GB  
MvQuv Kx ? wkgjMvQ etol `æZ, wKŠ` ej vBtqi AvMŃni mv\_t cvj v w`tZ cvti bv|  
ej vBtqi KvKv ejj, gvj vtK ej tZ nte, GUV Dcto tdtj w`tZ|

ej vB PgK DVj | G Kx `viæy K\_v! ej tj | ōbv, KvKv, tZvgvi `w cvtq cwo, Dcto  
tdtjv bv|ō ej vBtqi Pvpv ejj, GtKevti iv`li gvSLvfb DtvTQ| eo ntj Pviw`tK  
Zztj v Qvotq Aw`i Kti t`te| KvKvtK tevsvtZ bv tcti dvtq dvtq KvUtz KvUtz  
KvkKtK ejj, Kvk, Zvg KvKvtK evi Y Kti `vI, MvQuv thb bv KvtU|



eQi Lv#b#Ki g#a" MvQUv g`Iteto DVj | GB MvQUvi Dc#i ej vB#qi hZ t`# | `Pvi  
eri MvQUv KvUvi c#le DVj | ej vB#K tjvf t`Lv#bv nt#jv | Gi e`#j L#y f#t#jv  
KZ, #jv tMvj #ci Priv Av#b#q t`te | c#qvR#b Av#i KUv #kgj/MvQ Av#b#q teovi av#i  
j v#M#q t`te | KvUvi K\_v ej #j B ej vB Av#Z#K D#V | Avi I i Kv#K#K etj Gg#b#ZB  
Kx ev#R Ae`v nt#q#Q I i |

GB tQ#j #Ui tQvU eq#m Zvi gv g#v#v hvq | ZLb tm tKv#j | GB tkv#K ej vB#qi ever  
B#Av#bq#m#s co#Z #e#`k hvq | ej vB g#v#y nq Zvi GK Kv#Ki Kv#Q | hvi tKv#bv m#š#b  
#Qj bv | ej vB#K Zvi ever #e#`k #b#q hvq | ej vB#qi Kv#K tMv#c#b tPv#Li Rj  
td#j | ej vB#qi tkvevi N#i hvq | ej vB#qi e`e#Z #R#b#m, #jv t`#Lb Avi f#teb  
ej vB KZ eo nt#q#Q |

#Kv#bv GK mgq ej vB#qi KvKv t`L#j b, #kgj MvQUvi eo evo tetot#Q | Avi Zv#K  
c#k#j t`qv hvq bv | GK mgq #Z#b I Uv#K tK#U tdj #j b | Ggb mgq #mgj v t`#K ej vB  
Zvi KvKv#K #P#W #j Lj, #KvKv, Avgvi tmB #kgj/Mv#Qi GKUv tdv#UvM#dvi c#v#M#q  
`v | # ej vB#qi Kv#K Zvi `#gx#K tW#K ej #j b, #I #Mv `i#bQ, GKRB tdv#UvM#dvi  
tW#K Av#bv | # #Z#b #R#v#m#v Ki #j b, #K#b ?# #Z#b Zv#K ej vB#qi Kv#Bv n#Zi #j Lv  
#P#W#Lv#v t`Lv#j b | tm ej j, #tm MvQ #Zv KvUv nt#q tM#Q | #

ej vB#qi Kv#K G #b#q `#y#b Ab#M#Y Ki #j b bv | Avi A#bK#`b ch#S#ej vB#qi KvKvi  
m#f\_ GK#U K\_v#I etj b#b | J MvQ #Qj Zvi ej vB#qi c#Zi#f, ZviB c#Yi t`v#mi |

# c0g cwi t'Q`

welqe`

ie x`bv\_ VvKz` evsj vmvntZ` tQvUMt` wbr`^avivi mjo Ktib| c0g GK `kK mgq  
tj tMtQ Zui KweZvi AmObv tcwttq Mt`i c0st`i tc0tZ| KviY, Zui Avmj cwiPq  
wZwb GKRB Kwe| tmBmv t\_ wZwb GKRB MxvZKvi |

t`kxq bvbv mgm`v Avi msKU g`bi Mfxt`i th wntj wj Ztj wQj Zui mv t\_ thvM ntqiwQj  
e`w<sup>3</sup>K I cwi emi K msKU me wgwj t`q GB wQj ie x`bv t\_ i tQvUMt` i welqMZ tc0 Yv|

Avigiv Rmb, bvMwi K cwi t`tkB teto D`VwQj b Kwe| c0qvRt`bi ZvM t\_ Avtmb G  
evsj vq| GiB dj k0ZtZ tQvUMt`i g`k0 wbgwY cUvZt`i i M0gxY Rieb I wbmM<sup>0</sup>  
tmS` thP AevK gyZvq Kwe t`tq tMtj b tQvUMt`i i m` |

e`w<sup>3</sup>K I mvgwRK RiwJ Zvi ifcP t` c0k0kZ nq ie x`^ wj Lubi m` wbwgZ fvlvi  
web`vtm| ivR%wZK mgm`vi c`i vj Pj wP t` tewt`q Gtj v Zui i Pbvq|

ie x`bv t\_ i Mt`i welqe` wewP t` I eugyx| wewfb0e mvgwRK mgm`v, bvi xi  
`v0Z`Rxt`bi msKU, mgv t`R Zvi Amnvq Ae`vb ie x`bv t`K `vixv fite brov  
w`tq tQ| mjo ntq tQ Mí Kvi ie x`bv\_ VvKz`i nvtZ 0Acwi wPZv0, 0%agš0, 0`xi c t0-i  
gtZv me D`j L`thvM` Mí | mvgwRK i yYkxj Zv Zv t`K fqvbK fite AvNvZ Kt`i tQ| wZwb  
Gt`K yzavi wj Lubi w`tq k<sup>3</sup> nvtZ tgvKv t`ej v Kt`i tQb| Zui tj Lvq Ztj Gt`b tQb  
AgvbwK AbvPv t`i d`j m0 U`vtRwvi ifcP t` | Avevi t`kR cwi t`tk mvgv x`Zvi  
gta`B GK wP i Kvj xb m t`Z`i c0k0k NwUtq tQb 0t`cv ÷ gv ÷ vi 0 I 0Kvenj I qvj v0 Mt`i |  
Ab`w t`K gb`wE`K RiwJ Zvi Pwi t` D`tm t`b my`i ntq D`v tQ 0AvZw\_0, 0mgwB0 ev  
0b0bx0 Gi gtZv GKwaK Mt`i |

0KwM K I AvawbK Mí Kvi t` i mewak DcRxe` welq tc0| tc0gi eugw t`K RiwJ Zv|  
ie x`bv t\_ i Mt`i welqiw bvbvwa ifc i Awfe`w<sup>3</sup> t`Z wewk0| 0GKi w t`0 thgb wel`w k0Z  
tc0gi GK Abw y`wYK MxvZKve` tZgwb 0mgwB0 wL v` wbtUvj tc0gi GKw D0 gay  
wP t` | Ab`w t`K 0`jvkv0 tc0gi cUf w t`Z GK fqven c0k0 kimUvb; Avevi  
0wbkx t\_ 0, 0ga`ewZ0x0 I 0b0bx0 tc0gi wP i šbx e`Abv imgva t`h`ev`eZvi Zxi t`N t`j

cēngvb| tZgub Avevi ōkw-ōi g†Zv iƆ yžavi e-ev`x M†i i mƆtZ ubg® mvgvRK  
m†Z`iB ev-é D™mb|ŏ

uelqMZ wfbzVq, iPvixxiZi `enkto“, MvriK fvlvixxiZi be“ cēZbv I fvlvi  
μgveZfb evsjvM†i i civ\_Kr..iek`bv\_ tQvUM†K e`vB I MfxiZv Dfq w†KB  
mwe†kl K†i Z†j †Qb, hv iext`†Ei cōZfvevb M†i Kv†i`i ubR-^MVb%kjx ubg®Y I  
cōqvRbxq uk†i ixiZ cēZbvq wfvE `Zwi i Kv†R mrvqZv K†i†Q|

iek`bv†\_i M†i we†`uk c†ve G†Kev†iB Abgww-Z uQj | uelqMZ w†K `vbk  
`enkto“, M†i i uk†i ixiZvUI Zui ubR-†

iek`bv\_ uQj b evsjvmm†Z`i cōg mv\_℞ †QvUM†i Kv†i | tQvUM†i K MYgylx I gvb†i i  
tfZi tbqvi KwwZ;†Kej ZuiB| M†i i fvlv cōAj | tj Lv mvej xj | tj Lv†i tcŷvct†Ui  
w†K ZvKv†j th ev-éZv †Lv hvq, Zv†Z gvb†y, gvbveKZv-gb†y`Zi; cKwZ. civ†ek,  
Pj gvb Rxeb t\_†K i iæ K†i tgnbwZ gvb†y i K\_v evievi uk†i mlygva m†v†Z`i  
gaij†m m³ n†q cōYeš†n†q D†V†Q|

wZvb Zui tQvUM†i mgMō e½†`k†K `w† f†M f†M K†i†Qb| 1.bMie½ 2.cjwe½|  
cjwe½ Av†Q gvb†y I cKwZ.| Rbc` I cōKwZK `k`; GKw†K Mōg I tQvULv†i kni  
Av†i GKw†K b`-b`x, Lvj -vej, km`nxb I km`gq cōš†i Av†i me†P tewk K†i Av†Q  
inm`gqx cŪv| tQvUM†i ,w†j i i†mi Drm GBme Rbc` | iek`bv\_ e†j †Qb, Zui m†v†Z`  
`w† AvKv•y†v Av†Q-m†y-`†L, wein-w†g†j bc†g†v†g†v†R cō††ki AvKv•y†v, Avevi  
wbi†††k tmš`h†j v†K Dav†i n†q coevi AvKv•y†v|²

Ab`w†K gvK†xq †kōy Pwi††i weP††i hv` iek`bv†\_i tQvUM†i †K †`wL, Zv††j `úo nq  
th, ōcōg w†K, ga`w†K ev †kl w†Ki iPbv hvB t†vK bv †Kb, iek`bv†\_i tQvUM†i  
fveev` ev Ava`w†Z†KZvi †Kv†bv `vb bvB| Av†Q gvb†y, mvgvRK gvb†y, m†v†i Y Mixe  
ga`weE bibvix| G†Kev†i `wi`a I m†v†i Y gvb†y†K iek`bv\_ evsjvmm†Z`i civZvq  
Z†j a†i†Qb Ges tmUv tQvUM†i |ŏ³

1 Avg` i wdK, †QvUM†i i uk†i iƆ cŪrct†P iek`M†i (cKvK†j -1385 e½vā, X†Kv, Avb` `cKvK), c., 31

2 cōj\_bv\_ wekx, iek`bv†\_i tQvUM†i, c., 9-10

3 n†q`vi AvKei Lv†i i†bv, iek`bv\_ †kōx `w††Kv†y t\_†K, c., 143

ieɤ`bv\_ tQvUMtíi gta" c0KwZK `úk©tctZb| tctZb mly-`tL, wein-wgj bcY©  
gubemgvtR c0etki AvKv.yv| Averi freevt`i tKvtbv `úk©GLvtb tbB| Zui Mtí  
GKaitbi wítqj w÷K tqtUwi qwij Rg fi Kti \_vtK|

ieɤ`bv\_i Mtíi wélq l PwiÎ wbs0etMP`wi`ª, m0f nxb gubtj i Rxeb t`Lv hvq| wKŠ'  
th A\_0wZK c0Pxti Zvt`i RxebtK G Ae`vq títLtQ Zvi PwiÎ ,tj v givmgvR fv0tZ  
D`Z nq bv|

ieɤ`bv\_i Dcb`vtmi bwiqKvii thgb w0t`nrx tmw`K t\_tK wePvi Kitj t`Lv hvq,  
Mtíi t00vctU wectei cbl \_vKtj l w0t`tni evYx tbB| ieɤ`bv\_ Zvi Mtí  
cwi cwiK0 NUbvej x ev AvabK aviYv m0útk©gZvgZ cKvk KitZb| KLtbr wZwb  
gb`w0EK 0t0i teŠw×K w0tkl YtKB Mtí tenk c0arb" wítZb|

ieɤ`bv\_ th K\_v KweZvq, Mvtb cKvk KitZ evavc0B ntqU0tj b Ges th K\_v wZwb  
mvariY, mvejxj fvlvq ejtZ c0tibwb Mvtbi gva'tg, Zv-B e"3 KtitQb Mtí | Zui  
RxebvPri, ag0q Abkvmtbi evBti bv wMtq wZwb mw0 KtitQb tQvUMtíi hxtjyÍ |  
tQvUMí iPbvi c0t½ ieɤ`bv\_ w0tRi m0útkB Kti tMtQb, mnR l mvejxj  
`xKvti w0,0Avig c0tg tKej KweZvB wj LZg, Mtí-Utí eo nvZ w`B bvB, gvtS  
GKw b evel tWtK ej tj b, 0tZvgvtK Rwig`wii i wélqKg0`LtZ nte|0 Avig tZv AevK-  
Avig Kwe guby, c`-U` wj wL, Avig Gmtei Kx evS ? wKŠ' evel ej tj b,0Zv nte bv,  
tZvgvtK G KvR KitZ nte|0 Kx Kwii ? eveli úKg, KvtRB tei0Z nj | GB Rwig`wii  
t`Lv Dcj tÿ bvbviKtgi tjvtKi m½ tgkvi mthwM nq Ges G t\_tKB Avgvi Mí  
tj Lvil iianq|0

Rwig`wii Z`viiKi m0vt`B ieɤ`bv\_i Mtí DtV GtmtQ ZrKvj xb mgvtRi DBz`lí  
t\_tK c0jvctj w0Pz`tíi gubtj i K\_v| AvPri e`envi, ms`wZ. Avi w0w0vi i×  
RxebvPri | wélqe`i wítK jÿ Kitj ieɤ`bv\_i Mí ,tjvtK t00, mvgvRK Rxté  
m0útk©evPÍ", cKwZi m½ gubegtbi w0M0 AŠlí½ thwM l AwZ c0KtZi m0útk©GB  
KquU tk0YtZ fvM Kiv hvq| mvgvRK m0útk0 w0PÍ wPÍ i/cvqZ Mí ,tjvi gta"  
0`vb-c0Z`vb0, 0t`bv-cv l bv0, 0Qw0, 0`ngš0, 0cyhA0, 0tcr÷ gv÷vi0, 0Kg0j0,  
0Kvevj l qvj v0 BZ`w` |

---

<sup>1</sup> wRtZ>`fjv et`vcra`vq, kwštb0KZtb ieɤ`bv\_, m0c0fvZ, fv`1316|

Aciw`#K cKwZi m#½ M#i i thvMv#hM m#úwK# M#i i g#a" 0, Bab0, 0RmeZ I gZ0,  
0wbkx#\_0, 0ym#Z cvlvY0 D#j L#hM | mgq Avi m#Zvi c0qvR#b bq, eis iex`bv\_  
wbQK cKwZ. Avi tc0gi ev`ieK ifc cKv#ki ZvM` t\_#KB m#ó K#i#Qb Zui c0ZwU  
M#i |

**WZxq cwi t'Q`  
tQvUMt'í mvgvRK w K**

i ex`bv\_ Zui tQvUMt'í mgvRRxeþbi Ggb me w el q dwtq Zþ tQb, hv mgm'vmsKþ  
ZrKvjxb mgvRe`e`vi gþj AvNvZ tntbtQ| Zþj aþitQ mgvþRi w`gvb wPÎ| G  
KviþY Zui Mí ,þj v thgb cVKBw`Z ntqtQ tZgb mvoov RvMþqtQ gvbþj i ü`tq|  
i ex`bv`i GKwU Avþj wPZ tQvUMí 0%agšš0| hvi cäv b vmqKv PwiÎ `ngšš| th  
thŠZK bvtgi mvgvRK Avfkiþc RRwZ nq| mgvR ms`vþi teovRvtj Avex  
`ngšši `vgx AcykwýZ ntq| wKQzKiþZ cþti bv `xi Rb`| `vgx ntq bv tm iþL  
`wvþZ tctitQ G Ab`vtqi weiþx|

ZrKvjxb mgvR l ms`vi Zvi cZevt`i c\_ tiva Kþi `wvq| tm fv0þZ cþtiwb G  
AÜ ms`vþi avšší teovRvj | GgbwK `xi mnþhv×viþc Zvi cþk Gþm `wvþbvi  
mvm nqwb|

wKŠ`ngšš bwiZ Av`þkAveþj t\_þK wþRi e`w<sup>3</sup>Z;þ\_þK þj cwi gvYI mto Avþmwb|  
wþRþK ewþvþZ tm tKvþv Qj bvi Avkþ tbqwb| etj wb tKvþv wgt`| `vgwMþni kZ  
Acgvb nRg Kþi Pig `aþþ cwi Pq w`tqþQ| þklchšš Ab`vq-Aveþvþi wKvri `ngšš  
Avcb Ae`vþb Abo t\_þKþQ|

þcv÷gv÷vi Mþí bvi xmËyi kvkZ cwi YwZ Abw\_bx i Zb PwiþÎi ga` w`tq cKwvKZ  
ntqtQ| G Mþí bvi x ü`tqi gvbwK Kvbw cVkü`q Qþ hvq| Mfxi AvZþv` `wM KvþU  
mevi gþb| Abw\_bx i Zb Zely wgtQ Avkv wbtq Dj vþj i tmB tcv÷Awdþmi Pwiþ`þK  
Nþj tewiþqtQ| Zvi `v`veveydþi Avmte etj | wKŠ`tm Avi wþi Avþmwb|

i Zþbi GB AkþRþj i tQþb tKvþv mgvRK ev mvswwi K w el q wbnZ wQj bv| mg`i  
te`bv j kwvqZ wQj Mfxi ü`tqi inm`þj þK| be` BDþivcxq mf`Zvi Av`þkþj wj Z  
tcv÷gv÷vi mgvR-msmvi `elþg`i teovRvj t\_þK gy` ntZ cþtiwb| cþtiwb Abw\_bx  
i ZþþK Zvi Rxb avivq GKvKvi Kþi wþZ|

0`xi cÎ0 Mþí i ex`bv\_ AZ`šš mvejxj fvlvq gYvtj i AvZþghþ veva, AwaKviþPZbv  
dwtq ZþþZ Mþí i iæ`t\_þK tklchšš GKRB `ý þj LþKi fvgKv tiþLþQb| gYvj  
ifceZx l ewgZx nþj l Zvi `vgwMþ tKej Zvi iþci K`i KþitQ, KLþv ,þYi  
K`i Kþiwb| mgvR-msmþi weiþx mššMöþ Kþi l tm hLb AvwKZv w`þK iþv KiþZ  
e`nq GB Mwþ wbtq tm GKw`b cwi evicwi Rb l AvZþq`Rb t\_þK wew`Qbentq

Avk0g Avk0q tbq| agmKZ Avk0g Avk0q tbi qvUv hwi I tKvfbv `faxb tckv bq, Zely  
tm bZb GKUv Avk0q LjR cvq| mgvRi Kwb cvvemiK eUb t\_tK tm tewiq  
AvmtZ myg nq|

0Acvii iPZv0 Mtí i bviqKv Kj `vYx| Zvi mvmx c`tyc, `p gtbvej Avi vbtRi  
Ae`vbtK cvKvcr<sup>3</sup> Kivi th emj 0 iPšv Zv Avgt`i miz`B gy Kti | Kj `vYx vbtRB  
thšZKí KviY bvbv veZtK®Rovtbr vetqUv tft½ t`q| GgbwK tm vetqi Avmi t\_tK  
eitK Dtv thtZ eva` Kti | iayZvB bq, `faxbfite evi Rb` th wkyKZvi tckvq  
vbtRtK vbtqvRZ Kti |

Kb`v`vqM0í Amnvq GK ucZvi mvgvRK mgm`vi iPÎ iex`bv\_ Ztj GtbQb Zvi  
0t`bv-cvI bvi0 Mí vUtz| cYc0v th tkej GKvU mvgvRK Kzs`vi bq, eis GKvU  
gvivZK e`ma, ZviB GKvU Avtj L` Ztj atitQb GLvtb| GvU th KZ`i-eeP I bksm  
ntZ cvti Zvi GKUv `pvš GB Mí vU| etbv` estki tQtj tctq ivgmyi wgt`k  
nvRvi UvKvi cY `xKvi Kti ivqevn`tji tQtj i mv\_t\_ Zvi Kb`vi vetq w`tqvQtj b|  
tmB UvKvi ctjvUv w`tZ e`\_ntqtQb etj Zvi Kb`vK Avi vBR evvotZ AvbtZ  
cvitj b bv| DVtZ-emtZ křevvotZ kvivoi MÄbv Avi `vm`vmx`i Aetjv Avi  
AeÁv mn` Kitz nq ZvtK| AhZæAetjvq fxLY tivtM cto hvq tm| GKmgq  
vPvKrmvi Afite tm gviv hvq| ivqevn`tji eo tQtj i eD gtitQ Zvi tkI KZ` cvj b  
Kiv nq gnvmgviti vtn| A\_P Kx vbg0Zvi wKvi ntqtQ tm!

iex`bv\_t\_ i Avi GKvU Mí 0Z`vM0| Mtí i bviqKv Kzgy| tm veaev| iex`bv\_ Mí vUtz  
veaev KzgtK e`msmvi I Zvi metea gvbeZv ntZ Aev`QbæKti GKUv wgt`\_ i vP  
i`Zvi 0AvBvWtqtj 0 gvDZ Kti vZvb t`Lvib| eB nvTZ Qvt`i vPtj tKvVq etm veaev  
Kzgtgi gb niY Kti vQj tngš| tngší Dti`k` vQj gnr| Zvi gtb tKvfbv cvc vQj  
bv| v`veaev`i vbtq Kvjt Kvjt th Kzs`vi `Zvi ntqvQj tngš GK Agi t0gi  
ga` w`tq ZvtK tft½ t`qvi GK vet`vnx ifc vbtqvQj | tkI chš tctitQI tm| Zte  
ZvtK QvotZ ntqtQ Ni-msmvi | nvi ni fAvPvthP cY tngš hLb Zvi veevvZv `tK  
GKvU veaev Kvq`; tRtbi vecj kv<sup>3</sup> kvj x mgvR I ucZvi AeÁvi veitx Ni ntZ tei  
Kti w`tZ i vR ntj v bv, tkI vbtRB ucZv KZR.cvi Z`v<sup>3</sup> ntq m`xK tei ntq tmj |  
wkyv velqK Kzs`vitK tK`^ Kti iex`bv\_t\_ i vPZ PgrKvi GKvU Mí  
0tZvZvKvnbx0| tZvZvi wkyvi Rb` úKz Kijtj b ivRv| Dchš LvB vbg0Yi Rb`

tj tM tMj KgPvixe, | LuPv ^Zwi ntjv | ZZÿtY tZvZv tMj gti | Avi Zvi tctUi  
gta" MR MR Ki tQ KZ,tjv iKtbr cvZv | GB tZvZv Avi tKD bq, Avgv t`i  
tKvgj gwZ wki iv | we`v wkyvi bvtg hv t`iK Avgiv Ah\_vB tctikwbtZ ti tLuQ |  
hv t`i weivU tLj vNi GB meR cu\_ex Avi bxj AvKvk | GLvtbB Zvt`i Avmj mly |  
Avi fÿ Kti hv tK Avgiv Pvi w K t`qv t`qv Nti e`x Kievi tPóv Ki wQ |  
Ôkvw ð Zvi Ab" Avti Kiu Mí | hvi cávb Pvi Î e`iv | Mí wU tZ tL tU LvI qv w bgRj  
`w ivg, wQ`vg I Zvt`i `x t`i wbtq Gi Kvwvwb | Mtí i GKchq `vgxi t`qv Acev t`  
cúq Lbx i Avmwigifc t`vix mve"Ínq P`iv | GKmgq tm `vgxi Gtnb AvPi tY Pg tK  
DV tJ I cieZ mg tq G tK mn tR tg tB tbq | `vgx B t"Q Kti I GKmgq P`iv tK L tbi  
`vqfvi t` tK gy K i tZ cv t iwb | `vgx wQ`vg tP t q wQj Lbx wntmte `xi mg`Í`vqfvi  
wbtRi Nvto wbtZ | wKŠ' P`ivi `p cÿ"q Avi ewj ô e" w tZji Kv tQ `vgxi tKv tbr  
AvKwZ-wgbwZ Avi c k ô cvqwb | tkl iv tqi Rb" P`ivi Reiv e`x tKB wePvi K mZ"  
etj ati tbq |



cÂg Aa'iq  
bwiRe gndtRi Rætb bwb cÛZKj-Zv

cÛg cwi t'Q`  
ij Lubi tytÎ evameciË

weZiKZ ij Lubi bwiRe gndtRi eBtq cÛqB \_vKZ| Gi GKiu KviYI uQj , gZvgZ cKviki tytÎ uZub ht\_ó `úóev`x| 1978 mtj ugkii tcimWu Avbvqvi mv`vZ hLb BmivCtj i mt\_ K'vú tWwFU kwiPz³ `ÿi Ktib ZLb uZub GKRb ivRbWZ mtPZb mWwZ`K wntmte Gi mg\_8 KtiUjtj b| dtj , ZvB uZub GKRb G'vi weqvbj tjLK nlqv mtËj tmB mgq (1980 mtj) AtbK Avie t`tkB Zui Dcb`vm , tjv ubw × Kiv nq|

ugkii tcimWu Rvgj bvtmi (1918-1970) 1960 mtj Zui KwZcq Dcb`vm evtRqvB Ktib| KviY, D³ Dcb`vm , tjvZ bvtmi ckvmtbi cÛZ Zxe³ mgvtj vPbv Kiv ntqUj | ZLb chSÍ ugkixq K\_vwWwZ`K bwiRe gndtRi mWwZ`Kg³ek^cwi gdtj AZUv Avtj vob mWp Ktib|

cPvi gva`g wntmte tUij wfkB- wkÿv, ms`wZ. I webr`b RbMtYi t`vi tMvovq tçStQ t`q, Zvt`iK mvgwRKfvte mtPZb Kti tZvtj | bwiRe gndtRi AtbK tjLvB wntbgvi cvDij wC I gÂ bUtki Dchÿ nlqv mtËj KLtbv Zv ugWvqv cKvWkZ nqub| Btj KUwb. ugWvqv h\_vw³e ZvtK Gwotq Pj Z|

wKš 1988 mtj uZub hLb Avie tjLK wntmte cÛg tbvtej cy`vi tctj b, ugkimn Ab`vb` Avie t`k , tjvZ GZw`b Zui ij Lubi lci th ubtLavAv uQj Zv Ztj tbqv ntjv| GB cÛg tKvbtv Avie tjLK weij m³tbi AwKvix ntj b| GtK GtK cPvi - cPvi , mlyg-mly`wZ meB AR8 Kijtj b|

The New York Time Zvt`i cÛZte`b DttL Kti tQ, bwiRe gndtRtK hLb ckæKiv ntjv Avcub tbvtej cy`vtii \$ 300000 Wjvi Kxfvte e`q Kiteb, uZub Zui `xi gtLi w`k ZwKtq DEi w`tj b, GUv Avgvi `xB fitjv ej tZ cvite, tKvb KvtR tm GUv LiP Kite|

tgšj ev`xt` i tivlvbtj

cvöivZ`gbr AþbK tj LK I enyRrxt` i b`vq Bmj vwg tgšj ev`xt` i tW\_ wj t÷I Zui  
brv wQj | Bmj vgtK Dcnvm Kti miv gvb iak`x wj Ltj b Satanic verses eBiu | ZLb  
1989 mij , Bivþbi mteP agRq tbZv AvqvZžm iašj m tLwgbx(1900-1989)  
Bmj vgtK wbtq KUrÿ Kivi KviþY Zvi gZž žDi cy`vi `fç hLb GK wgwj qb Wj vi  
tNvIYv Kiþj b | GB tNvIYvi tçÿžZ 1992 mvtj Paris Review þK t`qv GK  
mivÿvrKvþi bwiRe G dþZivqvi wetiwaZv Kiþj b, wZwb `úofvte ejþj b, G aiþbi  
dþZivq cðvb Zvi GK aiþbi fž wmvš | bwiRe gvndR memgq gZvgZ cKvþki  
`faxbZvq wekm KiþZb | hw I wZwb iak`xi G aiþbi KgRvD e`w³MZfvte mg\_ð  
KiþZb br | Bmj vg agþK KUrÿ Kivi KviþYI wZwb miv gvb iak`xi mgvtj vPbv  
Kiþj b |

tLwgbx iak`xi gZž žDi cikvcwK G eBtqi cKvKt` i nZ`vi dþZivq w`þj b | wZwb  
tLwgbxþK AvL`wqZ Kiþj b GKRB mšymx wntmte | wZwb mn cðq 80 Rb enyRrxt  
GKwîZ ntq tNvIYv Kiþj b th, GKRB ivBuvþK nZ`v Kivi ga` w`tq ewktðwg Avþb  
Bmj vg I ggyj gvbþ` i tKvþbr aiþbi ýwZ Kivi AwaKvi bvB |

Satanic verses eBiu cKvþki ciciB cKvKZ ntjv bwiRei euj Avtj wPZ weZwKž  
Dcb`vm Children of Gebelawi hv þMvUv AvieRþo weZþK® So Zþj wQj | wgti  
Dcb`vmU ubwI × Kiv ntjv | bwiRe gvndþRi wj Lwb GB Dcb`vmUþZ Bmj vwg AvwK`vi  
I ci AvNvZ tnþwQj | G KviþY, ZvþK nZ`vi úgwK t`qv ntjv | I gi Ave`j ingvb  
brþg GKRB wgtixq agžÉje` ZvþK nZ`vi Dþiþk` Zvi MwZwewa AbyiY KiZ |<sup>1</sup>  
1994 mvtj i 14 Aþ±vei Bmj vgcšK Rwživ 82 eQi eq`ç GB K\_vmwvW`KþK cðY  
bvþki Dþiþk` wbr evmfeþbi migtb Kvqþiv knþiB Zui I ci nvgjv Kþi | Nvtoi  
GKcvþk tQviv w`tq AvNvZ Kiv nq | nvgjvKvix Mwwo thvþM `žZ cwiþtq þþZ mýg  
nq | GKUž Rb` tetþ hwb wZwb | GB nvgjvKvix m`úþK®mevi aviYv hviv ZþþK bwiK  
eþj tNvIYv KþiwQj ZvivB G NUbv NwUþqþQ | G nvgjvq Zvi evûi brf`þjv  
gviVZKfvte ýwZMð`nq |

---

<sup>1</sup> Deseret Morning News editorial, 7 september 2006

Zintj, Kx uQj GB Dcb'imUtz? GB Dcb'imUti Kwinub AvefnugK uZbuU ag<sup>o</sup>Bu<sup>w</sup>,  
Lóvb I Bmjvg<sup>o</sup>K ubtq AveWZ<sup>o</sup>| GB uZbuU atg<sup>o</sup> gvtS HwZnvmK w<sup>o</sup> K t<sub>-</sub>tk th  
G<sup>o</sup>tk<sup>o</sup>er`gj-K GKU Avštm<sup>o</sup>úK<sup>o</sup>e`"gvb th uelquU<sup>o</sup>tk bZb gv<sup>o</sup>Iv thwM K<sup>o</sup>ti Dc<sup>-</sup>vcb  
Kiv ntqtQ| Dbiesk kZvāx<sup>o</sup>Z ugt<sup>o</sup>ti Kvtiv kn<sup>o</sup>ti uerfbæRbct` uer`gvb GB  
Ae<sup>-</sup>v<sup>o</sup>bi uect<sup>o</sup>y ifcK A<sup>o</sup>t<sup>o</sup> Qj LK Zvi Dcb'imUtz<sup>o</sup> v<sup>o</sup>b w<sup>o</sup> tq<sup>o</sup>Qb|

Zvi Dcb'v<sup>o</sup>mi GKU Pwi<sup>o</sup>Ī Gebelawi| AnaKvsk mgvtj vPK gtb K<sup>o</sup>ti b tj LK Zvi  
Dcb'imUtz Gebelawi etj God tk v<sup>o</sup>b w<sup>o</sup> tq<sup>o</sup>Qb| uKš' G uel<sup>o</sup>tq tj L<sup>o</sup>tki e<sup>3</sup>e<sup>-</sup>  
gvby<sup>o</sup> v<sup>o</sup> v<sup>o</sup> m<sup>o</sup>útk<sup>o</sup>hv gtb K<sup>o</sup>ti Zvi GKUv m<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup> v<sup>o</sup> v<sup>o</sup> aviYv c<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>bi D<sup>o</sup>fi<sup>o</sup>tk" uZvb  
Gebelawi Gi c<sup>o</sup>Z<sup>o</sup>KU u<sup>o</sup> K<sup>o</sup>ti tq<sup>o</sup>Qb| uZvb Avil etj b, tKv<sup>o</sup>tv uKOB v<sup>o</sup>bi  
c<sup>o</sup>Z<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>iaZ; Ki<sup>o</sup>tZ cv<sup>o</sup>ti b<sup>o</sup>| v<sup>o</sup> v<sup>o</sup> tKv<sup>o</sup>tv uKQ<sup>o</sup>z m<sup>o</sup>vt<sup>o</sup> Z<sup>o</sup>z<sup>o</sup>b<sup>o</sup>q bq, uZvb uekvj I mgnv<sup>o</sup>b|  
GB Dcb'v<sup>o</sup>tm Av<sup>o</sup>tgi NUbv eY<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>q c<sup>o</sup>g Pvi<sup>o</sup>U Aa<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>tq GK K<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>B evi evi c<sup>o</sup>te<sup>3</sup> Kiv  
ntqtQ th, Gebelawi Gi Kv<sup>o</sup>Q Av<sup>o</sup>g Kx<sup>o</sup>fv<sup>o</sup>te Zvi Ab<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup> m<sup>o</sup>š<sup>o</sup>bt<sup>o</sup> i Z<sup>o</sup>z<sup>o</sup>b<sup>o</sup>q u<sup>o</sup>c<sup>o</sup>q ntq  
DV<sup>o</sup>tj b| ue<sup>o</sup>tkl K<sup>o</sup>ti Bevj m| G<sup>o</sup>t<sup>o</sup> i cieZ<sup>o</sup> c<sup>o</sup>R<sup>o</sup>b<sup>o</sup> R<sup>o</sup>vevj (Moses), vi dvn(Jesus) I  
Kv<sup>o</sup>tmg(Muhammad)| G<sup>o</sup>ti c<sup>o</sup>Z<sup>o</sup>t<sup>o</sup>ki Abyvixiv uerfbæRbct` Bu<sup>o</sup>w, Lóvb I  
Bmjvg atg<sup>o</sup> c<sup>o</sup>Z<sup>o</sup>K ntq em<sup>o</sup>W v<sup>o</sup>cb K<sup>o</sup>ti| e<sup>o</sup>bu<sup>o</sup> PZy<sup>o</sup>c<sup>o</sup>vi<sup>o</sup>t<sup>o</sup>Q<sup>o</sup> Avivdv Pwi<sup>o</sup>ĪU<sup>o</sup>  
t<sup>o</sup>Lv tg<sup>o</sup>tj, tm Dcb'imUti gly<sup>o</sup>Pwi<sup>o</sup>Ī| hv<sup>o</sup>tk Av<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup> K ue<sup>o</sup>Á<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>bi c<sup>o</sup>Z<sup>o</sup>K u<sup>o</sup>nt<sup>o</sup>te t<sup>o</sup>Lv<sup>o</sup>tv  
ntqtQ| u<sup>o</sup>Z<sup>o</sup>q c<sup>o</sup>R<sup>o</sup>tb<sup>o</sup> b<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>q<sup>o</sup>Kiv (b<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>iv) Z<sup>o</sup>t<sup>o</sup>K Abyvixiv K<sup>o</sup>ti<sup>o</sup>Q| Av<sup>o</sup> c<sup>o</sup>Z<sup>o</sup>K b<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>  
Abyvixiv<sup>o</sup> ue<sup>o</sup> K<sup>o</sup>ti<sup>o</sup>Q Avivdv Z<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup> i tj v<sup>o</sup>k| GB Kwinubi gj- tK<sup>o</sup> v<sup>o</sup> v<sup>o</sup> t<sup>o</sup>Lv hv<sup>o</sup>q GK  
ai<sup>o</sup>bi k<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>kvj x gv<sup>o</sup>be<sup>o</sup>v GB Rbct<sup>o</sup> i u<sup>o</sup>bqš<sup>o</sup>Y KiZ| Zviv RbM<sup>o</sup>Yi u<sup>o</sup>bivc<sup>o</sup>Ev u<sup>o</sup>bu<sup>o</sup>Z  
Kib<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup> Z<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup> i t<sup>o</sup>tk A<sup>o</sup> Av<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>q KiZ| Dc<sup>o</sup>tiv<sup>o</sup> b<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>q<sup>o</sup>Kiv GB k<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>kvj x gv<sup>o</sup>be<sup>o</sup> i  
Z<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup> i mg<sup>o</sup>tqB civ<sup>o</sup>tk<sup>o</sup>|

uKš' cieZ<sup>o</sup> c<sup>o</sup>R<sup>o</sup>tb<sup>o</sup> Avev<sup>o</sup>l bZb k<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>kvj x gv<sup>o</sup>be<sup>o</sup> Ave<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>ve nq| Z<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup> i u<sup>o</sup>š<sup>o</sup>t<sup>o</sup>PZbv,  
u<sup>o</sup>quK<sup>o</sup>g<sup>o</sup>c<sup>o</sup>te<sup>o</sup>R<sup>o</sup>vi k<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>kvj x gv<sup>o</sup>be<sup>o</sup> Z<sup>o</sup>z<sup>o</sup>b<sup>o</sup>q AZ<sup>o</sup>š<sup>o</sup>ubKó. ZLb Avivdv ue<sup>o</sup>Á<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>gb<sup>o</sup> GB  
bZb k<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>kvj x gv<sup>o</sup>be<sup>o</sup> i ue<sup>o</sup>b<sup>o</sup> Kivi Rb<sup>o</sup> Zvi ue<sup>o</sup>t<sup>o</sup>vi Yag<sup>o</sup>Á<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>tk Kv<sup>o</sup>R j v<sup>o</sup>M<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>vi tPóv  
K<sup>o</sup>ti| Ab<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>tk Gebelawi Gi in<sup>o</sup>m<sup>o</sup> D<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>U<sup>o</sup>b Ki<sup>o</sup>tZ P<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>| G in<sup>o</sup>m<sup>o</sup> Ave<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>ti<sup>o</sup> Rb<sup>o</sup>  
Avivdv th c<sup>o</sup>t<sup>o</sup>yc tbq Z<sup>o</sup>tZ GK k<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>kvj x ex gv<sup>o</sup>be<sup>o</sup> gZ<sup>o</sup>Z<sup>o</sup>N<sup>o</sup>U| c<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>b k<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>kvj x  
gv<sup>o</sup>be aviYv K<sup>o</sup>ti Avivdv GB Rbct<sup>o</sup> i m<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>fš<sup>o</sup>g k<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup> i AnaKvix nevi Rb<sup>o</sup>B Z<sup>o</sup>t<sup>o</sup>K  
m<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>h<sup>o</sup> Ki<sup>o</sup>Q| Avivdv gZ<sup>o</sup>zi ga<sup>o</sup> w<sup>o</sup>tq Dcb'v<sup>o</sup>mi Kwinub tkl nq| gZ<sup>o</sup>zi c<sup>o</sup>te<sup>o</sup>B

Avivdv Zvi eÜž mnþhvmZiq Gebelawi Gi inm` D` MvUv KiþZ myg nq|<sup>1</sup> Dþj L` th, 1957 mvtj bvmRe gvndR Children of Gebelawi Dcb`vmlU tj Lvi KvR `ia Kþib| agf AgvZþZ AvNvZ nrbvi Avfþhvm DþV G vj LvbþZ| vgti i Rbucþ cwiKv Avj AvnKvg 1959 mvtj avivevKfvte GvU AvimeþZ cKvk Kþi| Avi tjevþb cŭg cKvkZ nq 1967 mvtj | Philip Stewart KZR. GB Dcb`vmlU BstiRþZ Abw`Z nq 1981 mvtj | hv A`ewa Ae`vnZ iþqþQ| Philip Stewart hLb Zvi eBvUv Kvc ivBU vevu KiþZ A`KvZ. Rvbvþj b ZLb Peter Theroux KZR. Doubleday bZb GKvU BstiR fvmþ Abv` Kþi |

Dcb`vmlUþK eB AvKvþi cKvþki Rb` Kvqþivi agf vekt` vj q Avj Avhvi AbgvZ cŭvb t`þK vevZ vþK| Avie` ms`vZþZ agf mste`bkj GKvU mgvþR cvðZ` ms`vZi mvt\_ mv`k`cY` Kví vbK vKQz e`vZvgx veltqi AeZvibv nþjv GB Dcb`vmlU|<sup>2</sup> hv gvþj g Z\_v Bmj vvg mgvRe`e`vq Bgvbx AvvK`vi cwi cšK| ZvB msMZ KvíþY vevþKþ mþó nI qv tgvþUB A`fvvK vKQzbq| Aek` cþi Dcb`vmlU `eiæZ t`þK cKvkZ nþjv| A`ewa Dcb`vmlU vgti vbw x` vKþj I cvðZ` t`kmn þLv` vgti Dcb`vmlU þe÷ tmj vþi i Zvþj Kvq Ašf`vQj |

cþj k Zvi tvþUKkþbi Rb` Zvi Ici nvjvi eü cþeþ vbi vcvEv cŭvþbi cŭvi Kþi vQj, vKš` vZvb Zv MþY Kþi vvb| BvZcþe`Bmj vvg tgšj ev`xiv ZvþK mvs`vZK mšymerþ`i (Acms`vZi) g`vZv etj AvL`vqZ KþiþQ| Rv½ev`x`i Zid t`þK GZUv P`vþj Ä Qþo t`evi cþi I vZvb cþj vK vbi vcvEv e`ee`v MþþY m`SZ bv nþq Amxg mrvvmKZvi cwi Pq t`b| Aek` G NUbvi cþi vZvb cþj vK vbi vcvEv e`ee`v MþþY Kþi vQþj b|

GB nvjvi cþi I vZvb tj Lvþj vL Ae`vnZ tiþLvQþj b| µgvMZ Zvi `v`v`i AebvZ nþqvQj | VvqvþvUþmI vZvb Avµvš`nb| þkI eqtm vZvb cŭq AÜ nþq vMþqvQþj b| Kvvd nvDþR eÜž`i mvt\_ vbvqZ t`Lv Kiv, Avj Avnvg cwi Kví Avdþm hvI qv Ges D<sup>3</sup> `vþK gvþSgþa` Kjvg tj Lv Gme cŭq ev`B v`þqvQþj b|<sup>3</sup> Zþe cþj vcvEv ev` v`þZ cvþi vvb|

---

<sup>1</sup> Naguib Mahfouz-Wikipedia  
<sup>2</sup> www.theguardian.com/books/2006/aug/30  
<sup>3</sup> www.nytimes.com/2006/08/30

GB NUbvi Rb" `Rb ugkixq Bmj vug Rv½tK t`vIx mve"~ÍKti gZžĐ t`qv ntjv| ex  
 eqtm tPvtL fvtjv t`LtZb bv| Zely tj Lvťj uL Pwjj tq thtZ PvbťZb| uKš' nvgj vi  
 KviťY uZub th AvNvZ cvb ZvtZ tKvťbv-bv-ťKvťbv mgm"v tj tMB \_vKZ| GKbvMvto  
 uZub vj LtZ cviťZb bv| Zely eú Któ tj Lvťj uL Ae"vnZ ivťLb|  
 KviY, uZub ej tZb, GKRB tj LtKi cŹZw` b uKQzov-uKQyjj LtZ nq| 2002 mvtj GK  
 mvjvrvKvťi uZub etj b, uZub GLbl Zvi eBťqi Aa"vtqi bKkv`Zvi KiťZ cvťib|  
 Zte tmUv Lg Kg Mtí iB|  
 2001 mvtj gvKŹ hŹivťóŹ I ci th mšymx nvgj v nq Zvi l mgvtj vPbv Ktib uZub|  
 Zte uZub G-l etj b, mšymev` `gb Kivi Rb" hŹ tKvťbv mgvavb bq| 2006 mvtj i  
 iiaťZ ugkťi hLb Zui Dcb"im Children of Gebelawi cKvukZ ntjv, hvi fvgKv  
 vj tLwQtj b Ahmad Kamal Aboul Magd| hLb G Dcb"im tĵ Lvi KviťY gZžĵ ũgvK  
 t`qv ntjv, uZub KvqťivťZ Zui eÜzl AvBbRvex bmejj gubi nwee Gi mvt\_ GKmvt\_  
 \_vKťZb| gvndR l gubi AwaKvsk mgq GKmvt\_ gubťi i Awdťm KvUvťZb| GgbvK  
 Zvi AwaKvsk eBťqi tidvťiY ekĵ vntmte bmeťj i jvBteŹi tZ \_vKv eB, tĵv e"envi  
 KiťZb| bmvRe Zvi gZžĵ ce"chšlbmeťj i mvt\_B t\_ťKwQtj b|

WZxq cwi t"Q`

**ij LibtZ ivRbmZi cKvk**

bvRe gvndzRi yzavi ij Lib thgb igkii cPxb mgvR-ms-wzi gj AvNvZ  
tnbtwQj tZgwb tm t`tki we`gvb ivRbmZi lci l e`vcK cFve we`li KtiwQj |  
wZwb we`gvb ivR%bmZK cwi w`wzi tcljytZ D`vi l thšw³KZvcYwetePbvq mgKij xb  
welq, tjv wbtq thfite fvetZb Gi AvtM KLtbr tKD GZUv Mfxti wMtq fitewb |  
hv l wZwb GKRB mwinwZ`K Z\_vic l ivR%bmZK welq, tjv mwinwZ`i wfZi w`tq wZwb  
thfite dwtq Ztj tQb ZvtZ bvRe mwinwZ` gvbmi cvkvcvk ivR%bmZK tyt`Zui  
Ae`vi Ave`šj Yxq | G aitbi KwB c`tyc ZwtK tKej AwZxq e`w³ wntmteB  
cwi YZ Kwiwb, eis igkii BwZnvtm GKRB mwinwZ`K ntq ivRbmZ mtpZb ghP verb  
e`w³i Avmtb mgvmb KtiwQj | mwinwZ` mdj c`Pvi Yvi `xkwZ. `tfc 1988 mvtj wZwb  
tbvtej cy`vi jvf Ktib | Zui tj Lv, tjv tKvbtv-bv-tKvbtv fite ivRbmZi mt\_`  
mswkó |

1952 mvtj igkii AmvswavwbK c×wZtZ miKvi cwieZ` nq | Rvgvj Avājy bvtmi  
miKvi ygZvq Avtm | wZwb G miKvii tNvmetivax wQj b | Ab`w`tk wZwb Avtbrqvi  
mv`vtZi mg\_` w`tq wQj b | BmivCtj i mt\_` igkii th HwZnvmK K`v`ú tWwFU Pw³  
`ywi Z nq Zvi l mg\_` w`tq wQj b wZwb | tKej Kt%bmZK w`K wetePbvq wZwb G  
Pw³ tK mg\_` w`tq wQj b Zv bq, eis wZwb igki c`kæG w×vtš`DcbxZ ntj b; bvtmi  
cKvmb hv HwZnvmK tcljvcU wetePbvq Zvi miKvii cKZ.mgm`v Dcjwä Kti  
igkii `wi`Zv, AAZv, tivM-e`wa wbsšy Ges GKbrqKZtšj weiat× Ae`vb wbtq  
iv& cwi Pvj bvq RbMtYi gZvgZtK AMwaKvi t`q, ZteB bvtmi cKvmb igkitK  
mWkfite cwi Pvj bv KitZ myg nte | Avi Zv bvtmi cKvmtbi ctj mnR nte bv |  
Rvgvj Avājy bvtmii ivRZš; Aemvbi ci wZwb GKvati cwb eQi tj Lv tjl eÜ  
titLwQj b | KviY, GKRB Rbwt` l `ecwK tclmtWtUi mt\_` mgy`úK`i yv Kti  
tj Lv tjl Pwvj tq hv l qv AZ`š`jan e`vcvi |

Avtbrqvi mv`vtZi ygZvq Avmvi cti l hv Rvgvj Avājy bvtmi bwmZM cwieZ`bi  
gva`tg igkixq RbMtYi gZvgZi cWZ k&vkxj ntq `ecwK fveaviv clytia`vii  
KvhRix c`tyc wbtZb; ZeywZwb bvtmi miKvitK mg\_` w`tZb bv | KviY, wZwb  
gt`vi mnvqZvtK `via`fite AcO` KitZb | Zui mg\_` cwi w`wZ Avi l AebwZi

իմ արձագանքները / Գի Դժգոհությունները և անհանգստությունները / Գ  
Օրոք և անհանգստությունները / Գի Դժգոհությունները և անհանգստությունները / Գ  
Օրոք և անհանգստությունները / Գի Դժգոհությունները և անհանգստությունները / Գ

և անհանգստությունները / Գի Դժգոհությունները և անհանգստությունները / Գ  
Օրոք և անհանգստությունները / Գի Դժգոհությունները և անհանգստությունները / Գ  
Օրոք և անհանգստությունները / Գի Դժգոհությունները և անհանգստությունները / Գ

և անհանգստությունները / Գի Դժգոհությունները և անհանգստությունները / Գ  
Օրոք և անհանգստությունները / Գի Դժգոհությունները և անհանգստությունները / Գ  
Օրոք և անհանգստությունները / Գի Դժգոհությունները և անհանգստությունները / Գ

Օրոք և անհանգստությունները / Գի Դժգոհությունները և անհանգստությունները / Գ

Արցախյան հարցը / Գի Դժգոհությունները և անհանգստությունները / Գ  
Օրոք և անհանգստությունները / Գի Դժգոհությունները և անհանգստությունները / Գ  
Օրոք և անհանգստությունները / Գի Դժգոհությունները և անհանգստությունները / Գ

և անհանգստությունները / Գի Դժգոհությունները և անհանգստությունները / Գ  
Օրոք և անհանգստությունները / Գի Դժգոհությունները և անհանգստությունները / Գ  
Օրոք և անհանգստությունները / Գի Դժգոհությունները և անհանգստությունները / Գ

և անհանգստությունները / Գի Դժգոհությունները և անհանգստությունները / Գ  
Օրոք և անհանգստությունները / Գի Դժգոհությունները և անհանգստությունները / Գ  
Օրոք և անհանգստությունները / Գի Դժգոհությունները և անհանգստությունները / Գ

<sup>1</sup> By Joseph A. Kechichian, Special to weekend review, March 12, 2010, Gulf News

gbbkxj Zvq e'vcK cwieZ<sup>1</sup> Avbtj b| wj Lubi gva'tg t'kK eDv'tbvi Awfc<sup>o</sup>q cY<sup>o</sup>  
Ki t j b wZwb|

Zui wj LubtZ wZwb wgiixq RvZixqZvev't' i c<sup>o</sup>Z mg\_<sup>o</sup> Rmbtq wQ t j b| GgbwK c<sup>o</sup>g  
wekht'vEi Wafd<sup>1</sup> cwU<sup>o</sup>KI mg\_<sup>o</sup> Ki t Zb| thSetbi mPbv cte<sup>o</sup>wZwb G `j wLi  
mgvRZwšK I MYZwšK Av`k<sup>o</sup>0viv cfwieZ nb| GgbwK Zui c<sup>o</sup>g w'tKi `tUv  
Dcb'im Al-Khalili I New cairo tZ G Av`k<sup>o</sup>v`x tPZbvi cfwie `via'fivte j y Kiv  
hvq| Zi'ay eqtm wZwb Gi mgvRZwšK Av`k<sup>o</sup>Dt<sup>3/4</sup>wieZ ntq Gi c<sup>o</sup>Z GKvZzVl  
cKvk K t i b| wKš' Aí mg t qi e'eatb `j wLi DM<sup>o</sup>v`x wek'tmi Kvi t Y Gi mg\_<sup>o</sup> Kiv  
t\_ t K weiZ i B t j b| Zui eú mwinZ'Ktg<sup>o</sup>mgvRZš; I MYZ t šj c<sup>o</sup>Z mg\_<sup>o</sup> j y Kiv  
tM t j I Bmj wjg Pigcš t t' i c<sup>o</sup>Z Abvrv cKvk K t i b|

### ag<sup>o</sup>q D`vi Zv

Zui Mí, c<sup>o</sup>Ü I RvZixq `wb t K cKvkKZ wef bceAwU<sup>o</sup>Kj Mfxi fivte ch<sup>o</sup>j vPbv Ki t j  
t`Lv hvq, awgRZvi bvtg wZwb tMwv tgšj ev`xt' i K t Vvi mgvtj vPbv K t i t Qb| bwinRe  
gvnd<sup>o</sup> eš t Z t c t i wQ t j b, Bmj wjg Rg G wek'tmx mgvtj vPK`j Zui w b R`^wek'tm I  
Av`k<sup>o</sup>v`x tPZbvi Kvi t Y Z t K K U v y Ki w Q j |

wZwb etj wQ t j b, GKRb ag<sup>o</sup>Y g y j gvb t K me t y t' t B ag<sup>o</sup>q Abk v mb t g t b P j t Z nte  
Ggb t K v t b v eva'evaKZv t b B| me<sup>o</sup>q GB Avek`KixqZv h t Mi m v t \_ m v g Á m`n x b | wKš'  
Av g i v g t b K w i c K Z . B m j v t g i wea v b A b j v q x G K R b g y j g v t b i R x e t b i c <sup>o</sup> Z w U t y t' t  
B m j v t g i A b k v m b g v b t Z n t e | G L v t b w b t R i c Q ` I A c Q t ` i t K v t b v e v j v B t b B |  
m s M Z K v i t Y B G a i t b i g š é " a g <sup>o</sup> Y g y j g v b t ` i g t b K w b A v N v Z n v t b | h v m i v m i  
B m j w j g g Z v ` t k P m v t \_ % m v ` k " | w K š ' c v D v Z " m s ` w Z i m v t \_ m v ` k " c Y <sup>o</sup>

Zui G ai t b i g Z v g Z e " 3 K i v i K v i t Y B w Z w b i v o ' c a v b t ` i w e t O l c Y <sup>o</sup> g t b v f i v t e i w K v i  
n b | A \_ P a g <sup>o</sup> q ` u k R v Z i w e l q , t j v w b t q w g k t i i g t Z v G K w U t ` t k m g v t j v P b v K t i I  
R b t i v l t \_ t K w b t R t K e D v ' t b v i g t Z v h t \_ o c A v I g b b k x j w P š ' Z u i g v t S w Q j | w Z w b  
R b g Z t K m n t R B e š t Z c v i t Z b | G , t j v t g v K v t e j v K i v i K g R k j Z v - I Z u i R v b v w Q j |

---

<sup>1</sup> Wafd Party: wgiwfwEK GKwU ivR%wZK `j | c<sup>o</sup>Z<sup>o</sup>v-1919 mij | c<sup>o</sup>Z<sup>o</sup>vZv- m<sup>o</sup> RMj j y cvkv | c<sup>o</sup>v b  
Kivh<sup>o</sup> q-Kvq t i v, wgi | `j wU t f t 1/2 hvq 23 RjvB 1952 m v t j |



G aiþbi gšé" Kivi KviþY ivóçý Zui AþbK eB ubw × Kti | GKU uelq j ýYxq,  
 GKRb tj LþKi weiþ× hLb tKvþbv AwfþhvM DþV AþbK þýþÛB t`Lv hvq AwfþhvþMi  
 uelquU Avt`Šl mZ" wKbv tmUv AþþKB hvþvB KiþZ Pvþ bv| Pvþ bv Mfþi wMþq fveþZ|  
 mwZ"Kvi Aþ\_þj LK tKv Awfcþq e"³ KiþZ Pvþ|  
 1994 mvþj hLb bwiRe gvndþK nZ"v tPóvi AwfþhvM`þbþK gZÛ Ð t`qv ntjv  
 Zv`iB GKRb`þKvi KtiwQþj b, wZwb Avmþj bwiRtei ifcKagþtKvþv MíB cþobw|  
 wZwb Zui mþúþKþKej iþþQþb gvÛ |

**Bmj vgx þbZþZji mvþ\_ mþú,³ Zv**

þþþbKvþj bwiRe GKvšl e"³MZfiþeB mvþq" KZþK¹ wþþZb| cÜg w`þK wZwb  
 bwiRe gvndþRi þj Lv Bmj vgx tgšj ev`x uelq\_þj vi tþq mwvZ" mgvþj vPbvq teiw AvMþx  
 wQþj b| cþi Aek" gþþj g eþ`vi úþWi Ici mvþq" KZþe\_iaZcþcþve j ý Kiv  
 hvq| mvþq" KZþB bwiRe gvndþRi cÜg mgvþj vPK| wZwb 1940 mvþj i gvSvgnS  
 mgþq bwiReþK GKRb cÜZfvai e"³ eþj`þKvi Kþb Ges bwiRe gvndþK GKRb  
 weÁ cÜZ eþj I Dþj L KþiþQþb| Aek" cþi wZwb Avevi bwiRe gvndþRi mwvZ"i  
 Zþj mgvþj vPbv KþiþQþb|  
 bwiRe gvndþRi Rieþbi tkl w`þK Zui Semi- autobiographical Dcb"im Mirrors-  
 G mvþq" KZþ Gi GKU þbwZevPK cÜZKwZ. Zþj aþiþQþb|  
 cÜg w`þK hviv bwiRe gvndþRi cþsmv KþiwQþj b Zv`i gþa" mvþq" KZþ GKRb|  
 Zviv GþK Actii mvþ\_ eüevi t`Lv KþiþQþb| Gulf News Gi mvsew`K  
 Ramachandra Babu uelquU ubwðZ KþiþQþb þ, mvþq" KZþ hLb 1960 mvþj  
 Amy' ntq nvmcvZþj wQþj b ZLb bwiRe gvndþR ZvþK t`LþZ wMþqwQþj b| GLvþb  
 tj LþKi gvbe`i`x gþbi cwiþqþi cvkvcwþk Zv`i eÜZcþmþúþKþ cwiþq Rvþv hvq|  
 hv` I wZwb Zvi ivR%wZK gZv`þkþ mvþ\_ GKgZ wQþj b bv|  
 bwiRe wgtþi bZþ cRþþþi AþbKþKB cþveZ KiþZ mýg ntqwQþj b| Gþ`i gþa"  
 Ab"Zg AvBþe` bwej gþþi I ti`v Avmj vg|

---

<sup>1</sup> mvþq" KZþ: (9 Aþþve 1906- 29 AvMþ 1966) wgtixq þj LK, Kwe, wkyve` I Bmj wng wefþce  
 gZev`i cþ³v| 1950-60 mvþj i gþþj g eþ`vi úþWi GKRb þbZþj`vþxq ivRbwZwe` |

I ô Aa'iq  
mwnZ'PPiq i ex`bv\_i cwicwkRZv  
cŏg cwit'Q`

mwnZ'PPmniqK cwie emi K Aven

i ex`bv\_ VvKž GKU m<sup>3</sup>ŠRiq`vi cwievti RbMhY Kti b| GKU mwnZ`K cwit<sup>3</sup>ek  
wZib teto I tVb| Zui fwm<sup>3</sup>t<sup>3</sup>bq kŏh<sup>3</sup> tR<sup>3</sup>wZtcKvk Zui t<sup>3</sup>tk eqtm mvgvb`eo, tm-B  
ZvtK cŏg KweZv tj Lvi Drm<sup>3</sup>vn t`b| Zvi Drm<sup>3</sup>vn wZib KweZv i Pbvq eZx ntj b| G  
m<sup>3</sup>útk<sup>3</sup>i ex`bv\_ wbtRB etj tQb, ŐGKw`b`g<sup>3</sup>yt<sup>3</sup>ej v Z<sup>3</sup>avi Nti WwKqv j Bqv ewj tj b,  
tZvgtK c`w<sup>3</sup> wL<sup>3</sup>tZ nBte|Ő<sup>3</sup> gv<sup>3</sup> m<sup>3</sup>vZ ev AvU eQi eqmx GKRB wki i ct<sup>3</sup>y G ai<sup>3</sup>bi  
KweZv i Pbv ZLbKvi w<sup>3</sup>tb Av<sup>3</sup>th<sup>3</sup>ŋ w<sup>3</sup>elq etU| fvtM<sup>3</sup>etR<sup>3</sup>wZtcKvk Zui t<sup>3</sup>tk L<sup>3</sup>y tenk  
eo wQ<sup>3</sup>tj b bv| G NUbv VvKž cwievti mwnZ'PP<sup>3</sup>ŋ weivRgvb Ave<sup>3</sup>ni cKvk j<sup>3</sup>yXq|  
VvKž cwievti i m<sup>3</sup>v<sup>3</sup> tmKvtj i L<sup>3</sup>wZgvb A<sup>3</sup>tbK Kwe, mwnZ`K I m<sup>3</sup>úv`tki I Vv-emv  
wQ<sup>3</sup>| Ziv w<sup>3</sup>bq<sup>3</sup>wZ hvZvqvZ KiZ VvKž emotZ| R<sup>3</sup>ieb<sup>3</sup>ŋZ t<sup>3</sup>tk R<sup>3</sup>vbv h<sup>3</sup>iq ZLbKvi  
b<sup>3</sup>vk<sup>3</sup>bj tccvi ct<sup>3</sup>ŋi Gw<sup>3</sup>U<sup>3</sup>i kŏh<sup>3</sup> be<sup>3</sup>M<sup>3</sup>vcij w<sup>3</sup>ŋ<sup>3</sup> cŏqB Zvt`i emio Avmv-hvlqv  
Ki<sup>3</sup>Zb|

Zui fvt<sup>3</sup>qiv Zui KweZ<sup>3</sup>kw<sup>3</sup> weKvtk b<sup>3</sup>v<sup>3</sup>fv<sup>3</sup>te m<sup>3</sup>th<sup>3</sup>w<sup>3</sup>MZv Ki<sup>3</sup>Zb| GKw`b Zui `v`v  
tm<sup>3</sup>tg<sup>3</sup>bv\_ VvKž (1859-1923) hLb be<sup>3</sup>M<sup>3</sup>vcij eveyZvt`i emotZ Av<sup>3</sup>mtj b ZvtK  
tM<sup>3</sup>ŋZvi Kivi g<sup>3</sup>tZvB c\_ Av<sup>3</sup>Kto a<sup>3</sup>ti Av<sup>3</sup>Z Drm<sup>3</sup>vt<sup>3</sup>ni m<sup>3</sup>v<sup>3</sup> ej tj b, be<sup>3</sup>M<sup>3</sup>vcij eveyŐi we  
GKUv KweZv w<sup>3</sup> wL<sup>3</sup>qv<sup>3</sup>Q, i b<sup>3</sup>ly-bv|Ő<sup>3</sup> ej K Kwe ZvtK KweZv tk<sup>3</sup>v<sup>3</sup>vtZ GKUž wej<sup>3</sup>α<sup>3</sup>  
Kitj b bv| iayZvB bq, bg<sup>3</sup>ŋ<sup>3</sup> t<sup>3</sup>z<sup>3</sup>i tnWgv÷vi m<sup>3</sup>vZKw<sup>3</sup> `E g<sup>3</sup>nvkq GKw`b  
i ex`bv\_tK w<sup>3</sup>R<sup>3</sup>t<sup>3</sup>Am Kitj b, ŐZ<sup>3</sup>wg b<sup>3</sup>w<sup>3</sup>K KweZv w<sup>3</sup> wL<sup>3</sup>qv<sup>3</sup>\_vK|Ő<sup>3</sup> i ex`bv\_ GB cw<sup>3</sup>ŋZi  
KvtQ AKvZti t<sup>3</sup>Kvi Kitj b wZib KweZv tj tLb| Gi ci ntZ cŏqB m<sup>3</sup>vZKw<sup>3</sup> `E  
g<sup>3</sup>nvkq ZvtK KweZv tj Lvq Drm<sup>3</sup>wnZ Ki<sup>3</sup>Z `B-GK c` KweZv w<sup>3</sup>qv c<sup>3</sup>ŋ<sup>3</sup>KweZv i Pbv  
Kti Av<sup>3</sup>tZ ej tZb|

---

<sup>1</sup> i ex`bv\_ VvKž, R<sup>3</sup>ieb<sup>3</sup>ŋZ, (cKvkKij -1421, XvKv, Aemi), c., 28  
<sup>2</sup> cŏ<sup>3</sup> B, c., 30  
<sup>3</sup> cŏ<sup>3</sup> B, c., 38

t̄mKv̄tj i dvi m-cov i mK gvby k̄kÉeve<sup>1</sup>yeqtm e<sup>2</sup>ov n̄tj I ḡtbi w̄K w̄tq Avb>`-  
 w̄tbr̄ t̄b mevB̄tK ḡmZ̄tq i vL̄tZ Zui Zjybv nq bv| w̄Zib i ex`bv̄\_i KweZvi GKubô  
 f<sup>3</sup> w̄Q̄tj b| i ex`<sup>a</sup> Ygy tkŌZv w̄nt̄mte Zvi t̄cŌYv Kwe<sup>2</sup>K `via<sup>2</sup>fite AbgŌw̄YZ  
 K̄t̄i<sup>2</sup>Q| emōtZ w̄ evi w̄l̄ m̄w̄ntZ<sup>i</sup> nvl qv weivR KiZ| t̄mB evj K̄v̄tj B i ex`bv̄\_  
 cŌ<sup>2</sup>ŷ K̄t̄i w̄Q̄tj b Z̄t̄ i m̄<sup>2</sup>Li <sup>e</sup>vK̄L̄v̄v̄emōtZ Av̄tj v R̄tj Z, t̄j vK P̄w̄j Z, Ōv̄t̄i Ōv̄t̄i  
 e<sup>2</sup>ov e<sup>2</sup>ov M̄mo Ḡm v̄gZ| emōtZ Kx n̄<sup>2</sup>Q Zv e<sup>2</sup>stZ bv cvi t̄j I m̄we<sup>2</sup>stq evi v̄<sup>2</sup>vi  
 t̄i w̄j s a<sup>2</sup>t̄i t̄m̄w̄t̄K Z̄m̄K̄tq v̄K̄tZb| i ex`bv̄\_i L̄gZz f̄vB M̄t̄y>`bv̄ VvK̄z<sup>2</sup>  
 ivgbri vqY ZK̄P̄Z̄K w̄tq bebvUK t̄j w̄L̄tq Zvi Aw̄fbq VvK̄z emōtZ n̄w̄Qj | m̄w̄w̄Z<sup>2</sup> I  
 j w̄j ZK̄j vq VvK̄z c̄w̄i ev̄t̄i i Dr̄m̄v̄t̄ni t̄K̄v̄t̄bv K̄ḡw̄Z w̄Qj bv| M̄t̄y>`bv̄ w̄b̄t̄R I w̄w̄fb̄e  
 t̄<sup>2</sup>t̄ki B̄w̄Z̄n̄m̄PP̄q tek Av̄M̄b̄x w̄Q̄tj b| w̄Zib Āt̄bK B̄w̄Z̄n̄m̄ evs̄j vq w̄j L̄tZ Av̄i<sup>2</sup>  
 Ki t̄j I Zvi Av̄K̄w̄<sup>2</sup>K ḡZ̄Z̄ K̄v̄R̄w̄J mḡv̄ar K̄t̄i t̄h̄tZ c̄v̄t̄i b̄w̄b| Zui i w̄PZ w̄e<sup>2</sup>μ̄t̄ḡv̄eR̄x  
 b̄v̄Ūt̄Ki GK̄w̄ Ab̄ḡv̄<sup>2</sup> Ōv̄c̄v n̄t̄q̄w̄j | Ḡgb̄w̄K Zui i w̄PZ e<sup>2</sup>p̄-m̄sM̄xZ<sup>2</sup> w̄j GL̄t̄bv  
 aḡm̄sM̄t̄Zi t̄k̄b̄<sup>2</sup> v̄b Aw̄aK̄vi K̄t̄i Av̄t̄Q| w̄ZibB c̄Ō<sup>2</sup>g t̄<sup>2</sup>k̄v̄b̄j̄t̄Mi M̄v̄b I KweZvi  
 m̄f̄c̄vZ K̄t̄ib| i ex`bv̄\_i eo `v̄<sup>2</sup>v w̄Ō<sup>2</sup>R>`bv̄\_ (1840-1926) em̄oi `w̄ȳt̄Yi  
 evi v̄<sup>2</sup>vq w̄eQ̄v̄v̄ t̄c̄tZ m̄vḡt̄b GK̄w̄J t̄Q̄v̄U t̄W̄<sup>2</sup> w̄b̄tq Ō<sup>2</sup>c̄e<sup>2</sup>Ō<sup>2</sup>v̄YŌ w̄j L̄w̄Q̄tj b| M̄t̄y>`bv̄\_  
 t̄ivR mK̄v̄tj <sup>c̄</sup>e<sup>2</sup>Ō<sup>2</sup>v̄t̄Yi Kwe w̄Ō<sup>2</sup>R>`bv̄\_i t̄mB `w̄ȳt̄Yi evi v̄<sup>2</sup>vq Ḡm em̄tZb|  
 w̄Ō<sup>2</sup>R>`bv̄\_ w̄j L̄t̄Qb Av̄i i b̄v̄t̄<sup>2</sup>Qb| M̄t̄y>`bv̄\_i Nb Nb D<sup>2</sup>P̄n̄w̄m̄t̄Z m̄w̄w̄Z<sup>2</sup>i t̄mi Ac̄vi  
 Av̄b̄t̄<sup>2</sup> evi v̄<sup>2</sup>v thb t̄<sup>2</sup>v̄j t̄L̄tq h̄v̄t̄<sup>2</sup>Q| Ḡ m̄<sup>2</sup>ú<sup>2</sup>t̄K<sup>2</sup>i ex`bv̄\_ e<sup>2</sup>t̄j b, ŌZL̄bK̄vi GB  
 K̄ve<sup>2</sup>i t̄mi t̄f̄v̄t̄R Av̄ov̄t̄j -Av̄eW̄w̄j n̄B̄tZ Av̄ḡivl e<sup>2</sup>w̄ÂZ n̄BZvg bv| eo<sup>2</sup>v̄<sup>2</sup>vi  
 t̄j L̄b̄x̄ḡt̄L ZL̄b Ōt̄<sup>2</sup> i f̄il̄vi K̄í b̄vi Ḡt̄K̄ev̄t̄i t̄K̄v̄Ūt̄j i t̄R̄iv̄qvi -ev̄b W̄w̄K̄qv Av̄w̄m̄Z|  
<sup>c̄</sup>e<sup>2</sup>Ō<sup>2</sup>v̄t̄Yi me w̄K̄ Av̄ḡiv e<sup>2</sup>s̄Z̄ig| w̄K̄š<sup>2</sup> c̄t̄eB̄ e<sup>2</sup>w̄j q̄w̄Q, j̄v̄f̄ K̄w̄i evi R̄b<sup>2</sup> c̄j̄v̄c̄w̄j  
 e<sup>2</sup>s̄v̄i c̄Ō<sup>2</sup>qv̄R̄b K̄t̄i bv| mḡt̄<sup>2</sup> i Z̄ǣc̄v̄BZvg w̄K̄ bv R̄w̄b bv| c̄v̄B̄t̄j I Z̄iv̄vi ḡj<sup>2</sup>  
 e<sup>2</sup>s̄Z̄ig bv, w̄K̄š<sup>2</sup> ḡt̄bi m̄va w̄ḡŪv̄B̄qv t̄XD L̄v̄BZig; Z̄iv̄vi B Av̄b>` Av̄N̄v̄t̄Z w̄k̄iv-  
 D̄c̄w̄k̄iv̄q R̄xeb̄t̄<sup>2</sup> i Z̄ P̄Âj n̄B̄qv D̄w̄Z| Ō<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> k̄kÉEveyt B̄ib i v̄q̄c̄t̄j i m̄s̄n̄c̄w̄i ev̄t̄i i k̄kÉE m̄sn̄ ḡn̄ik̄q| m̄t̄Z>`c̄h̄b̄m̄sn̄ ḡn̄ik̄t̄qi t̄R̄öZ̄v̄Z|

<sup>2</sup> M̄t̄y>`bv̄\_ VvK̄z (1841-69), t̄<sup>2</sup>te<sup>2</sup> b̄v̄t̄\_i Ab̄R̄ w̄M̄i w̄<sup>2</sup>b̄v̄t̄\_i t̄R̄öc̄ŷ|

<sup>3</sup> i ex`bv̄\_ VvK̄z, R̄xeb̄<sup>2</sup>ŷZ, (c̄k̄v̄k̄K̄v̄j -1421, X̄v̄K̄v, Āemi), c., 85

mvinZ“PP® AKwĭg Drmvin

†R“vZwi>`bv\_ VvKzi eÜzAýqP>`ª tPšajx mvinZ“ thgb Zvi J`vh©uQj tZgub  
 eÜZj| mvinZ“†fv†Mi AKwĭg Drmvin mvinZ“ cvi†Z“i tP†q| A†bK tek  
 „iaZcY† GB Drmvin cŦv†bi „Y mK†j nvmj Ki†Z cvi bv| wKš‘AýqP>`ª tPšajx  
 Ggb „†Y „YmšZ GKRb gvby| Zui Avi l etov „Y uQj , wZub evj†Ki `tj evj K  
 n†Z †Kv†bv wšav Ki†Zb bv| Kv†iv m†\_ tgv†i týtĭ eq†mi fvebUv Zui Kv†Q  
 KL†bvB cšvb“ tcZ bv| ZvB wZub hLb VvKž emoi eo†`i mfv n†Z A†bK i†Z  
 we`vq w†Zb ZLb iex`bv\_ eüw`b i†Z Zui B`žN†i tu†b G†b†Qb| iex`bv\_  
 etj b, Őw†Ri †j Lv Zuv†K KZ i bvBqmQ Ges tm †j Lvi g†a“ hw` mvgvb“ wKQz, Ycbv  
 \_wKZ Z†e Zv†v j Bqv Zuv†i Kv†Q KZ Ach†š cĭsmv j v† Kvi qmQ|<sup>Ŧ</sup>  
 mvinZ“ Kv`†x †`exi L† AbijM uQj | tKej mgq KvU†bvi Rb“ bq, h\_v\_B  
 mvinZ“im †fv†M wZub mvinZ“PP® Ki†Zb| iex`bv\_ mvinZ“PP® ZuiB Askx  
 n†qu†j b| wenvixj vj PµeZ† mvi`vg½j -msMxZ Avh©k†ctĭ hLb tei n†Z Avi †c  
 K†i uQj , Kv`†x †`ex Gi Kve“ tmš`th©AZ`šĭgy nb| Kve†K wZub gv†Sg†a“ emotZ  
 `vl qvZ w†q Lvl qv†Zb| GgbwK wB n†Z `Zwi K†i Kve†K GKlwb Avmb  
 w†qu†j b| G mgv†` Zui ms`útk©Avmvi tmšfvM“ n†j v eiex`bv†\_i | wZub iwe†K L†  
 †` K†i Zb| iel w†b-`y†i Zui emotZ w†q nvmRi n†Zb| Gfv†e K†i iex`bv\_  
 Zui D`vi ü`q, D“P KveÁvb m†úbwPš†fvebvi m†\_ cvi uPZ n†Z \_v†Kb| GK mgq  
 Zui mvinPh©j v†fi Kv††Y Kve†i g†b GB tPZbvi mÁvi nq, wenvixevj g†Zv Z†Kl  
 Kve“ wj L†Z n†e|

emotZ †Qu eq†m iex`bv†\_i Kvegv††mi Dc†hvMx K†i Z†K ŐK†vi m†eŦ I  
 gv†K†e\_ cov†Zb M†w†y†K eveyÁvbP>`ª f†vPvh©gnv†kq| ivgme©^ f†vPvh©gnv†kq  
 cov†Zb ŐkKšĭj vŦ|<sup>2</sup> iex`bv†\_i c†j v cvi evi UvB uQj mvinZ“K cvi t†ki GK wekvj  
 wePi Y†ýĭ| emotZ mvinZ“i PP® n†Zv| gRij m emZ| N†i \_vKZ isteis-Gi  
 Qvel qvj v gv†mK cvi†Kv†m iKgv†i me KvMR| †KvUv †Qu†`i cv“, †KvUv Acw“  
 Gm†ei avi-avi†Zb wZub| g†bi Avb†` c†o th†Zb| wK†kvi iex`bv\_ `y†i tkve†i  
 N†i uPZ n†q i†q w†fba†i K†gi eB cov†Zb| KL†bv Avot†j , KL†bv AveW†j | `x†eÜz

<sup>1</sup> iex`bv\_ VvKž, R†eb`žZ, (cĭKv†Kij -1421, XvKv, Aemi), c., 88

<sup>2</sup> g††j Kv teMg, iex`bv\_ : ŐR†eb`žZŦ: GK, (cĭKv†Kij -2012, XvKv, ga†), c., 66-67

uqfTi ÔRvgyBewi KÔ VvKž emotZ tQvUt`i cov ubwl x ntj l uZwb tKŠktj eBwU cto  
tdtjb| ctofoQb ivfR>`f vj uqfTi Ôweveav\_©msMhõ bvgK Qwel qvj v gvimK cwiKv/  
ÔAtevaeÜž cwiKv, emgP>`i Ôe½`kßÕ, mvi`vPiY uqfTi l Ayq miKvfi i ÔcöPxb  
Kve`msMhõ| G aiþbi cwiKv uZwb emotZ etmB cotZb| tQvUtej v t\_þKB KweZv l  
Dcb`vtfmi eB ZvqK Avieó Kti ivLZ| Qtk erav ubqfgi evBti ubfRi gZv Kti  
uj LtZ-cofZ cQ>` KifZb| `žweivMx iex`bv\_ KZ mntRB mvinZ`vbjvMx iex`bv\_  
ntq DVtj b|

AvfMB DtjL KtiwQ, LgZžZv `v`v Mty>`bv\_ VvKž, Mty>`bv\_ VvKž, eo `v`v  
uofR>`bv\_ VvKž, tR`vuzwi>`bv\_ VvKž, eDw` Kv`x`fx t`ex Gti i mKtj i mvinZ`vbjvM  
VvKž emotZ mvinZ`i nvl qv eBZ| Mvb, bvUK, Awfbq, mvinZ`i Avmi, Kve`PPf G  
mKj Aby½ emoi eot`i cöY PvAj` mwi tfZi w`tq tQvUt`i gtb t`vj v w`tq thZ|  
Kwe`iae ÔRxeb`žZõ-þZ Zui wki gþbi weKvfk G`tjvi K\_v DtjL KtifQb|  
`žZPviY KtifQb tmB tQvUtejvi w`b`\_tjvi K\_v| Zte Zui `v`v uofR>`bv`\_i  
Kve`cöZfvi tQvqv evj K Kwe iex`bv\_ Kve`iPbvq D×x ntq Zui Kwe`K tgav l  
gbbkxj Zv weKwKZ nwoj wbtmþ`tn| Zui cöZfv weKvfk tjtî emotZ th mvinZ`  
Aven weivR KiwQj, tmB Ae`vbþK þKvþbvfvteB tQvU Kti t`Lvi AeKvk tbB| Zte  
Kwe cwi evti Rbþubþj B Kwe n l qv hvq bv wfZti KweZk<sup>3</sup> \_vKþZ nq|

WZxq cwi t"Q`

mgvRK I iVR%wZK cwi cwkRZv

i ex`a Kve`cZfv fvi Zxq Dcgnv`tki mgybr tciw tq mveRbx b`xKuZ. wbtq nekqg  
 Qwotq coj | nekhnwntZ` wj Lubi gva`tg PgK mjo Kijtj b| w`tk w`tk Zui bvg|  
 ZLbI fvi Zxq Dcgnv`tk weUk iVRZ; Pj tQ| Zui mwinwZ`K Rxeabi cji v mgqUvB  
 wj weUk kvmb| wj Lubi gva`tg wZwb mivmwi weUk kvmk tköyi gZLvgnv nbw|  
 K`wv qvi mjo tZ GLvfb wZwb ht\_ó cÄvi cwi Pq w`tqtQb| dtj cZöw jvtfi ce`  
 chš KLtbr Ztk weUk tivlvbtj cotZ nqwb| Aek` wZwb hLb cZev` Kti tQb  
 ZLb GwotqI \_vKtZ cvtibw| ZZytY i ex`bv\_ GKw AvBKtb cwi YZ nqtQb|  
 wj Lubi tyt` Awakvsk tj LKB GKw bwx Aeja b Kti \_vtKb| ZvB mgkij xb  
 we`gwb cwi w`tZ i vó`I mgvRi mvt\_ gwbtq tbi qvi cEYzv j y Kiv hvq| i ex`bv\_  
 mivmwi Zui wj Lubi wFZti iVRbxwzi Abzdek bv-NwUtg eüea mgvRK KgRvtdi  
 gva`tg mgvR ms`vi I iVR%wZK e`vcti cZev` RvbtqtQb|  
 cÜg nekhy cieZP mgq A\_wZK wechqmn teKviZ; `v`nwmb, yav`wv`a I  
 gnvgnwi i KvitY Rbwbqšy bvtg GK bZb Avt`vj tbi mjo nq DEi Avtgwi Kv I  
 BDtvtc| G Avt`vj tb bvxivB AMYx fvgKv ivtL| fvi ZeI P brixev`x tbZvivi  
 weUqwi i, iaz; Abgweb Kti Zvivi fvi ZeI G Avt`vj tbi WwK t`b| GB Kwlg  
 Rbwbqšy i wecty thgb Ae`vb wbtj b Bvgv, cji wvZMY tZgwb eta mvrjtj b  
 fvi ZeI iVRbxwzZ mivavi Y RbMtYi Awemsew` Z tbZv`qs gnvZw MvÜx<sup>1</sup> |  
 wZwb th GKevtiB Rbwbqšy i wecty Zv bq, Zui B`Qv agvq bwx I Av`tkP ga`  
 w`tg `v`gx-`v`tk epPh`I mshgi Abkxj tbi gva`tg Rbwbqšy Kiv| wZwb Avti KwU  
 gZ w`tj b weqti eqm ewxi | MvÜwvri gtZv GKrb wePyY tbZv fvi ZeI P Av`  
 mgvRK tcvvU wePbvq bv wbtqB covtj Lv bv-Rvbr AmtPZb gvbly tjv w`tg  
 Kxfvte GwU mæe tm w` KwU fvetj b bv|  
 fvi tZi Avf`šli xY tcvvctU weUqwi mnR mgvartbi c\_ AZ`šlyxY nI qvq i ex`bv\_  
 VvKz GB mgm`vi Avii mgvavbKtí Avtgwi Kvi mgvRtmex I Rbwbqšy i Ab`Zg tbZv

<sup>1</sup> tgnb`vm Kigpü MvÜx: ( 2 A±vei, 1869- 30 Ribgnwi, 1948)

W. g'vMvfiU m'vsMvfi<sup>1</sup> kiYvcbæntj b| W. g'vMvfiU m'vsMvi, Bsj`vfiU W. tgvfi  
t÷vcm<sup>2</sup>, mBtWtbi Gtj b wK-i<sup>3</sup> gtZv cüögv tjLKt`i tjLvjt wL, cPvi cPviYv I  
AvtjvPbvi ga`w`tg Rb`vqšYi cty` cüögv t`kmn fviZel<sup>4</sup> Ab`vb` `wi`<sup>a</sup> I  
Awak RbmsL`vi t`k`\_tjvZ RbgZ`Zwi nq|

G weltaq tRi ati iex`bv`\_i mvt`\_ m'vsMvfi Nibô m'vK`%Zwi nq| G weltaq  
iex`bv`\_ Zvi wBR`^AwfgZ e`<sup>3</sup> Ktib| wgtmm m'vsMvi iex`bv`\_tK Zui m'vuvv` Z  
Birth Control Review<sup>4</sup>, cwi`Kvq gZvgZ wj tL cvvtZ etj b|

Rb`vqšY weltaq MvUwRi wetiwaZvi Lei tRtb iex`bv`\_ wgtmm m'vsMvi cEwZ  
Avt`vj`tb kvvgj ntj b| AbvKw`yZ mštb Zvi wbtRi Rxeb, gvtqi Rxeb wbtvki  
KviY ntZ cvti | cvkvcwv mgvR I ivtófi Rb` AwZwi<sup>3</sup> tevSvI | GB wQj iex`bv`\_i  
cÜwgK`kØ| AvR eü eQi cti I iex`t`\_i GB fvebvi mZ`Zv LtR cvl qv hvq|  
AvR hv ev`émvZ|

AwfÁZvi Afve, Ziæ eqm BZ`wv` KviY cÜgw`tK hw` I iex`bv`\_ `wv`<sup>a</sup> i gj  
KviY wntmte Awak cRbtK`vqx KtiQb| AwfÁ iex`bv`\_ mvgR`ev`, ivó I cvRi  
gvvj Kt`i Kvqvg`v`<sup>2</sup>, ewYK Pwi`ti wFzi w`tg `wv`<sup>a</sup> Avmj KviY wPwYZ Kitz  
mÿg nb| 1930 mvtj Zui iwkvq` ågY tkfi AwfÁZv I Dcjwäi gva`tg G K\_v  
cwi`<sup>2</sup>vi ntq Dtv| `wv`<sup>a</sup> i Rb` GKgvI RbmsL`vB`vqx bq| BstiR I Zvt`i  
Gt`kvq t`vmi I gvvj K tkvYi`elg`gj-K AvPiYI Gi Ab`Zg KviY|

cÜZev`x iex`bv`\_

iex`bv`\_i tKvbtv evsjv Mš' wewK miKvi wvwl × Ktiwb| wKš' 1934 mvtj iwkvq`  
ågtYi AwfÁZvtK KvR j wMtg Modern Review<sup>5</sup>, cwi`Kvq hLb Zui On Rusiaö  
Z\_v öiwkvqvi wPwö bvtg cÜg BstiR wKw`wU cKvKZ ntjv wewK miKvi Gi cKvkvb  
wvwl × Kti | Zui Rxei kvZ GB wbtlavAv Avi Ztj tbqv ntjv bv| cÜgevti i gtZv

<sup>1</sup> g'vMvfiU m'vsMvi : ( 14 tmtp`v, 1879- 6 tmtp`v, 1966)

<sup>2</sup> W. tgvfi t÷vcm : ( 15 tmtp`v, 1880- 2 At±vei, 1958)

<sup>3</sup> Gtj b wK: cty`v bvg Gtj b K`vti wj bv tmvcdqv wK ( 11 wMtm`v, 1849- 25 Gwcvj, 1926)|

<sup>4</sup> Birth Control Review: thšbµxov m'vuvv`Z GKwU g'vMwRb, m'vuv`K- g'vMvfiU m'vsMvi, cKvKvj ( 1917- 40)|

<sup>5</sup> Modern Review: j ÜbwfiEK wKí I ms`wZ. wvqK GKwU g'vMwRb| cKvKvj ( 1991-95)|

uj Lub w`tq iex`bv\_ mivmwi weuUk`i weia`x hLb Zui ubR`^AurfgZ I wef`k  
agfYi mivAZ AurfAZvi AvtjvK ev`ezvK Ztj ati fviZetlP mivZ`Kvi At\_©  
`wif`^i KviY ej tZ PvBtj b ZLb tLv` weuUk cKvmtbi cy t\_tK eo GKUv av°v  
tLtZ ntjv| tRbvij Wvqvi ( 9 At±vei, 1864- 23 RjvB, 1927) cvÄvtei kvmb  
ygZv MhY Kivi ci cKv`k` teÎvNvZ, MYtMöZvi I Aurfbe c×vZtZ Rjv-  
vvhPZtbi Pitg tctQ hvb| mštmi ivRZ; Kvtag Ktib| 1919 mvtj i 13 Gucj  
Rvij I qvbl qvj vevtMi Rb` `ši Yxq GKUv w`b| Lø Ag½j tWtK Avtb GB w`bvU|  
gvbeZvi weia`x GiU uQj RNb` GKUv Aciva|

OmZ`vMh<sup>1</sup>0 Avt`vj tbi Ask wntmte Avüz Rbmgvtefk thvM`vb KitZ Avmv tjvKRb  
Ges mgvtefki I ci cvÄvte Rvii Kiv nq mvgwiK AvBb| PviRtbi tevk GKtÎ  
Pjvtdivi I ci vbtlavAv Avtivc Kiv nq| uKš` GB mgvtefk AskMhY KitZ Avmv  
AvaKvsk gvbyB Mhgi | Ab`w`tK mvgwiK AvBb m`úK©Mög t\_tK Avmv GB mviavi Y  
gvby,tjvi tZgb tKv`bv aviYv uQj bv| Avi GB mvgwiK cÄvcb m`úK©  
cPvi cPvi YvI tZgb nqv|

tRbvij Wvqvi KZR. tgvZv`qbKZ. Rvij I qvbl qvj vevM gvfv`v tMtu cÖZ ivLv  
`mb`iv tKv`bv cKvi AvMvg mZK©mgvtef f½i tPov e`vZvi tK GgbvK msukö cyj k  
Avcvmit`i AbgvZ bv-vbtqB gvfv AvU`K cov mviavi Y RbZvi I ci GKUv`v`k vgvbu  
`vj Pvjvq| ZLb gvfv AvU`K ctovQj cÖq cUv nvrvi gvby| Zv`i I ci tQvov nq  
GK nvrvi Qq kZ cÄvk ivDÜ `vj | GtZ vbn`zi msL`v Gtm `vovq Pvi`kv-i I  
tevk|

iex`bv\_ mivmwi ivRbvZi mvt\_ m`ú<sup>3</sup> bv t\_tKI Pj vZ NUbv m`úK©me LieB  
ivL`Zb| vZvb eü AvtMB Av`vR KitZ tctiQvj b RbMtYi g`bi Ae`v| weuUk  
kvmtk`i gvi g`yx g`bvfe| RbMYtK vbtq Zv`i eügvx AvksKv|

---

<sup>1</sup> mZ`vMh: tgvnb`vm KigPvü MvÜxi (v`vnb gnvZv MvÜx v`tgI cviiPZ) cÖZvöZ GKUv `kÖ Ges Avnsm  
cÖZtvtai Abjxj b| tgvnb`vm KigPvü MvÜx mZ`vMhni PP©KtviQvj b fvi`tzi `v`vbxZv Avt`vj tbi Ges  
`v`yY Avvdkvq fvi Zixq`i AvaKvi cÖZovq|



ivl j vU AvBtbi<sup>1</sup> weiaf x MvÜmR hLb ÔmZ vMôÛ i iæ Ktib i ex`bva ejs wbtqUQtj b weyä RbMY KLtBvB wbcxoftbi gL kvšl vKtZ cvti bv| tkl chšl Zvi avi YvB mZ`Zvq ifc wbtj v| 1919 mrtj i 30 tg wZwb Rvuj l qvbl qvj vevM nZ`vKvftDi cÜZevt` gRj g RbZvi cvtk` wotq mgte`bv cKvk Kijtj b| tPgöndi tK Zui bvBU Dcvna wdwitq tbi qvi Rb` wPw wj Ltj b|

weUKiv mvariYZ Zvt`i AbMYZ` r`msi yK Gwj Ut`i Zvt`i Lyki bRivbv wntmte GB Dcvna w`tq vftKb| Zte i ex`bv\_ mwwntZ` wekRbxb gvbeZvi Rb` GB mæšbbv tctqUQtj b| Avevi weUK mvrR`ev`ti RjygevR wns`a AgvbwEK AvPiŕYi tçÿtZ wZwb GB Dcvna t`Qvq wdwitq w`tj b| i ex`bv\_ KLtBv Ôm`viÛ Dcvna bvtgi AvtM e`envi Kitzb bv| evsj v Mš` tZv wj LtZbB bv, wKš` t`Lv hvq BstiwR Mš`i cKvkKMY Ôm`viÛ e`envi Kitzb| GB Dcvna eRfbi ci BstiwR Mš`l Ôm`viÛ tj Lv ntZv bv|

fvi Zxq Gwj U tkÿtK e`envi Kti weUKiv Zvt`i mvrR` i yvi bvtg` vmewEi KvRwU cvw Pvj bv Kitzv| ei x`bv\_ GB tmev` vmewEi weiaf x hvb, iæL` wovb fvi Zxqt`i GB nxbæš`Zvi wectÿ| Gtnb KvRtK GKRB mgvR mtPZb mf` fvi Zxq bMwi K l tj LK wntmte wZwb tgtb wbtZ cvitj b bv| GKw tK wZwb thgb e`v Abŕe Ktib, Ab`w tK j ¾vq l Acgvtb µgk yä ntq l tVb|

cÜg wekht x ci wgi Zž` l Avie t`k, tjtZ RvZxqZvev`x tPZbvi RvMi YtK bm`vr Kivi Rb` tme t`tk fvi Zxq`mb` tçÿY l e`envit i wectÿ Avtgmw Kv etmB wZwb Gi Zxe`wb`v Rvrbv| GB` vmewEi mgvtj vPbvi çÿvY cvl qv hvq evsj v 1332 mtb cKwvKZ i ex`bvt`i Ôk`-æg` çÿtÜ| i ex`bv\_ nZevK nb 1952 mrtj hLb GKRB weUK Awdmvtti wbt`k fvi Zxq`mtb`i` wÿY Pxtb QvÎ-kägK weŕvfv wgtQjtj l ci wj Pvj vtvvi Lei RvftZ cvtib|

Ôk`-æg` çÿtÜ i ex`bv\_ kŕ` Amrvq` vmtZji th cÜZ`Qwe Avb KtitQb ZviB ev`é cÜZdj b t`LtZ cvb fvi Zxq`mtb`l AvPiŕY| Ôk`-æg` çÿtÜi tkl evtK` i ex`bv\_

---

<sup>1</sup> ivl j vU AvBb: wePricwZ ivl j vU i tbtZtZj cvb m`m` wbtq MvZ G Kvgkb| 1919 mrtj i 18 givP`G AvBb cÿqtbi gva`tg weUK mi Kvi MYZwšK mKj Avŕ`vj tbi KÉtva l mšymevt`i bvtg` gb ctoftbi aviv Ae`vnZ ivtL|

weUk`i ntq fvi Zxq`i `vmeEi mgv`jvPbvq etj b, 0...hw` ``eµtg tKv`bwi`b  
 weU`mbqv fvi Zel`K nvi vq, Zv ntj `bk`m tdtj ej te : I miss my best servant.<sup>1</sup>  
 1936 mtj i 4 tm`P`af tej `Rqv`gi e`tmj m kn`i Abv`Z vek`kvi`l mt`afj `b  
 i ex`bv\_ VvK`z etj b, 0`Kej gv`I hy `be`E`KB kvi`l bv eij qv kvi`li A\_`hw`  
 e`vcKZi Kvi qv Z`j `Z nq, Zvrv nB`j b`vqci vq`Yi kv`i Dc`iB Zvrv`K c`Zw`Z  
 Kvi`Z nB`te, `g`R`bi Kvi`li Dci b`n| Av`v`mbqvq kvi`li Av`Z`v` t`u`b`i h`x`i  
 tKvj vj nB`Z Kg ex`frm b`n| Kv`RB th kvi`l`K GK Rv`Zi civ`te Aci Rv`Zi  
 g`a` cwi Zv`B. d`b`qv D`V bv, tmB kvi`l`hw` Kvg` nq, -Zvrv nB`j g`L kvi`li K\_`v eij qv  
 mt`½ mt`½ m`M`g ev h`j `Z `te`i f`M-e`U`v`qvi vq e`vcZ nI qvi g`Zv `em`k Ae`v  
 nB`Z mg`x Rv`Z, `ij i c`Z`K bi bvi`x`KB Av`R g`y nB`Z nB`te| bv nB`j kvi`li eij  
 th fvb gv`I, Zvrv bM`v`te c`Kv`k`Z nBqv ci`ote| c`Z`k`Z mg`x I gh`v`i Dr`Kv`P`K  
 tm fvb Avi `v`k`K`Zv eij qv bv P`j vq| 0<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> miv` Kvgvj x, i ex`bv\_: Ab` GK gv`by, c., 64-65

## mBg Aa`vq

bvRe gvndZri e`w<sup>3</sup> I mvinuZ`K gvbm gj`vqb

cŏg cwi t`Q`

e`w<sup>3</sup> gbbkxj Zv

%eevK eÜtb bvRe gvndZ mvinuZ`K K`vivi mŏtZ evav vntmte gtb KitZb/  
ZvB veevn eÜtb Ave× nZ `xNRij Ačyiv Ktib| Aetkŏl tZZvuj k eQi tcwitq  
AveevnZ Rxeŏbi cwi mgvŏb Nuvŏj b| mgvR msmvi vbtq eüglyx Kg<sup>3</sup>-Zv, bvbv  
mxgve×Zv I msKxYZvi teovRvŏj vZv b hLb Zui fvBŏevbŏi i veevnZ Rxeb AŏbK  
KvQ t\_ŏK t`ŏLŏQb Gme Zui gvbmctŏU veifc Qve AvŏZ nŏqŏQ| %Zvi KŏiŏQ veevni  
cŏZ Abxrv|

Zui AvZŏqcvv Rb hLb tKvŏbv evmŏtZ AvguŏŏZ AvZv vntmte thŏZv Zvivi  
Zvŏi iŏKl vbgŏŏ Kŏi AvmZ| dtj GKaiŏbi cwi evvi K mgm`v tj ŏMB \_vKZ| mgq  
KvUZ mismvvi K bvbv Svŏgj vq| veevn cieZŏmgŏq msmvi agvŏbtq Zvŏi i Kg<sup>3</sup>-Zvi  
bZb gvŏv thvM nŏZv| Avb`Qv mŏEj Rxeb Nvŏb ŏmŏRb`ŏevŏai G mKj vŏqvKj v  
Zvŏi iŏK vevfbŏevŏvŏq thŏZ eva` KitZv| GŏZ e`w<sup>3</sup> `ŏxvZv Leŏq etj vZv b gtb  
KitZb|

1954 mŏtj bvRe gvndZ vgtŏi Avŏj KRv`ŏvi mbvZb vgtixq vLŏvb Kb`v  
AvvZqvZvj v Bŏvntŏgi mŏt\_`eevK eÜtb Ave× nb| G NŏiB Zvŏi i `vŏ tgŏqi Rbŏ  
nq| dvvZgv I Dŏŏŏ Lvj Zŏ|`eevK Rxeŏbi cŏg chŏŏq vZv b m`xK bŏj bŏi i cwiŏg  
Zvŏi AvŏMvRv Gj vKvq j vBŏŏevŏW<sup>3</sup>emevm KitZb| Gici vZv b H Gj vKviB GKvU  
G`vciUŏŏŏU Rxeŏvcb KitZ \_vŏKb| vZv b GKRB cŏvi vevŏ tj vK vQŏj b| Zui  
e`w<sup>3</sup>MZ Rxeb AvŏvÜvb Kitj Gme Z\_` cvl qv hvq| vevfbŏevŏvŏj I ti vŏv tcvŏvŏ  
mŏúPvvi Z mŏvŏvKvi t\_ŏK Gme veŏq `úo nq|

Avi ve Dcb`vm mvinŏZ`i AMvŏvZŏZ eü cŏŏZ bvRe gvndZri mŏt\_ mŏú<sup>3</sup> vQŏj b|  
Zui mŏvKŏg`ga` kZvŏxŏZ vgtŏi AvvŏK Rxeŏvcbŏi GKvU vPŏ `ŏv`kŏi xi eYŏvq  
fv`i nŏq DŏvŏQ| Zvi fvŏv`kŏj x ceŏZŏ`i Zŏbvq bZb GK AvŏK `Zvi Kŏi vQj |  
GKRB tj LK vntmte vZv b vgtŏi i mgvR, i RbvvZ vbtq Mfvv fvŏe DvŏMvevŏvŏj b|  
vgtŏiŏK vbtq vZv b Lvŏ tevŏ fvŏZb| bvRe gvndZri Dcb`vm ,tj vŏZ vgtŏi i RvZxq

HuZn`\_tj v#K mgKuj xb ivRbWZi m#\_ m#úK©^Zui i gva`tg AvaybK cwieWwK  
Rieb#K mvg#b #btq Avm#Zb|

bWRe gvnd#Ri A#bK M#i iB gE` #elq brix Pwi#| #Zub Zui Avakisk tj Lvq  
#gk#i i brix`i b`bZg gh#vi GKUv c#Z"Qne Z#j a#Zb| Gfv#eB mK#j i `#  
AvKI#Yi gva`tg GKUW mvgW#RK cwieZ# Avb#Z m#y#g n#q#Qb| Zui GKUW M#i j #  
Kiv h#q, GKUW ev#j Kv c#ZZv #nt#te tkW#Z n#q #mLvb t\_#K tew#q Avmvi Rb`  
msM#gx n#q D#V#Q|

Aci GKUW M#i t`Lv h#q i #Yk#j cwievt#i GKRb g#nj v N#i i R#v#j v #`#q tL#j v  
c#\_exU#K #`Lvi #`axbZvU#Z nW#i#q t#j#q| h#`tm GKUW AvaybK cwievt#i i n#q  
\_#K Z#nt#j Gme Zvi K#Q tK#b#v ev#i #elq bq, tm Abv#q#m G AvakviU#Z#f#W  
Ki#Z cv#i|

c#j#v R#e#b #Zub gv# #Zbevi #gk#i i evB#i #M#q#Q#j b| Ggb#K #Zub #K#n#q  
t#v#ej c#\_#i M#Y Kivi Rb`tg#q D#`\$Lv#j Z# I d#vZgv#K c#W#q#Q#j b|

bWRe gvnd# #Q#j b GKRb #ek#eL`vZ Avie Jcb`#mK| Zui #j L#bi g#\_#elqe`B  
#Q# gvZ#f# #gk#i#K #btq| c#P#b #gk#i#q m#`Zvi ga`#e# I #bb#e# #k#Yi  
gvb#\_#tj v#K #btq Zui M#i I Dcb`v#mi Av#j vP` #elq #e`#Y#µg#eb`v#mi Av#j v#K  
m#y#i f#e Z#j a#i#Qb|

1919 m#j #gk#i#q #ec#ei #v#v #Zub c#f#veZ n#q#Q#j b tm Kvi#Y Zvi #P#` I gvb#m  
RvZ#qZ#v`x Av`#k# Q#v c#q#Q| hvi c#v#Y Zui #j L#b#ZB #`Lv h#q|

bWRe gvnd# #Q#x#q #ek#`#i ci mgvRZ#W#K Av`#k#ek#m#x nevi Kvi#Y #Zub M#f#i  
nZ#k#q f#W#Q#j b| G mgq #Zub ivR%#WZK t#y#vcU cwieZ# #btq KvR Kivi t#q  
R#e#bi c#KZ.g#b Dc# #ä Ki#Z mnKg#t#j LK Av#j K#v#j I Avng` RvK# gvK#y  
#`i #v#v AvKó. n#q mgv#j vP#v#j-K #j Lv#j #L #btq `xN#mgq AvZev#nZ K#i b|<sup>1</sup> bWRe  
gvnd# tK#b#v #j L#b#Z hLb g#\_#g #nt#te a#q# Av#j vP#v Avb#Zb tmB Av#j vP#v  
`v#k#K `# f#W#i Av#j v#K A#W#ek#m#`i #btq D#W#Z #elq\_#j v Dc`#cb#q L#B  
cvi`k#W#Q#j b|

---

<sup>1</sup> www.gradesaver.com

## mnwvZ`K wntmte Ae`vb

mnwvZ`K bwiRe gvndtRi cfi ve wQj vekê`vcx/ ô Naguib Mahfouz was not only A Hugo and a Dickens, but also a Galsworthy, a Mann, a Zola and a Jules Romaiu.<sup>1</sup>

wgkixq tj LK Avbr Avj Avml qvbx etj tQb, ô Mahfouz was the founder of the new Arab novel, and he opened doors for five generations of Arab novelists. He is our father.<sup>2</sup>

wZvb GKwU msÿYkxj cwi evti Rbÿ wbtj I AvawbK a`vb-avi Yvq `vkwbK wPšlq cMwZkxj fivcbaD`vi gvbwKZvi AvwKvix wQtb b/ agfQ DMZvK wZvb tKvbrfvteB mg\_8 Ki tZb br/ tj LtKi `vaxbZvq wZvb vekwmx wQtb b/ hw` I wZvb Ggb GKwU cwi evi t`tk tewitq GtmtQb tm cwi evti Bmj vgtK GKwU cwi cY`Rieb weavb wntmte gvb` Kiv ntZv/ Zvt` i gZv`k`GgbB- GKRb gyj gvtbi mKj KvRB cwi Pwv Z nte KzAvb-mbyan Ablyvqx/ Bmj vg atg`vekwmx gyj gvb wntmte Zvt` i wPšl-vekwm meB wQj h\_vh\_ I mwvK/

Avie mnwvZ`K Z\_v wgtti GKRb ms`viev`x tj LK wntmte Zvi MpxZ mgvR ms`vigj-K AtbK c`tycB Ziaÿ mgvR mv`ti Mby Kti tQ/ Ab`w`tk AvwK`wMZ weltq gZv`bK` mwó nlqvq Avie ms`wzi wecixZ Gme c`tyc wKziÿYkxj tZv` mntr tgtb wbtZ cvtiwb/ me tyt`B Bmj vtgi Ablymb tgtb Pj tZ nte wZvb Gi cÿcvZx wQtb b br/ G atbi AwfgZ ZvtK ckwx Kti Avie wtkf gLvglyx Kti wQj / dtj 1994 mtj agfQ Pigcšt` i Oviv wZvb nvj vi wKvi nb/

---

<sup>1</sup> The London Review of Book

<sup>2</sup> www.gradesaver.com

WZxq cwi t"Q`

mwnwZ`K gvbm gj`vqb

mgq I hMvcthmX wclq wbtq mwnZ` iPbvq wmxn`bwmRe gvndR | wj Lub w`tq PgK  
mwoi gva`tg cVKmgvRtK AvKó.KitZ myg ntqtQb | Zui Mí,tjv GKertí  
wfbagP | hvi `óvśí Zui cŪg MíMš' 0همس الجنون (nvgmjy Rbtb) | cVKwctQZvi  
KviY 1979 mtj Gi `kg ms`iY cKvkZ nq | Zui Míi i w\_g engwīK wclqtK  
tK>^a Kti wbugZ ntqtQ | GKwaK weevn, efxi mt\_ Kgvixi wj b (weevn), bMzv,  
thšvPvi, gv`Ktmeb, mwo inm` BZ`w` mvgvRK-cwi ewi K mgm`v,tjv Zui mwnZ`  
Rxeśntq DfVtQ |

bwmRe gvndR Zui WZxq MíMš' دنيا الله (wqvj m) iPvri tfZi w`tq cŵvY Ktib  
wetkŕ tmiv Mwi tKi Zjbvq Zui Mí wki gvtb tKvtrv Astk Kg bq | MVbkxj chPq  
AvZµg Kti wZwb `y` tjLtki `vb AwKvi KtiQtQb | G Mš'í wetkI Zj cVKtK  
`viæfvtē gy Kti | Mí,tjv tZ wZwb mvgvRK I mwoZÉj wclqK GK bZb avi Yvi Rbt  
t`b | mwnZ` mwoi fvlv wntmte wZwb همس الجنون (nvgmjy Rbtb)-G mnRciV` I  
nvj Kv wcltq ifcvtYi tPóv Ktib | wKš' WZxq Mš' GB gvbmKZv cwivri Kti  
PgrKvi mwoKij `kwíK `yZvi cwipq w`tq GKrb `y` wki gvb mæúbemwnwZ`K  
wntmte AwefZ nb |

GB Mš'í دنيا الله (wqvj m) هنزل والعسكري (nvbhij I qv Avj -AvmKvix), الجامع  
(Avj -RwqŪ), في الضرب (wd Avj -`ie) bvgK Mí,tjv tZ mvgvRK `elg` bwiZi  
civkvcvk `wii`^, gv`Kvkiv^3, Pvj ewiR-takvewiR, alP G RvZxq wclqe` Avtj vKcvZ  
KtiQtQb | dtj Zui Mí,tjv mgvRtPZbv Avi wki,tYi mgštq mv\_R tQvUMtí i  
ifcKvi wntmte Zui mly`wZ Gtb w`tqtQ | G Mš' mwoinm` wbtq tjLv,tjvi gta`  
Ab`Zg- موعد (glqv`), كلمة في الليل (Kwvj gv dx Avj -j vBj), الحادثة (Avj -nw`Qv)  
mn Avi I wKQzMí | G,tjvq gZžnm`, mwoinm`, gZž fqvenZv gg`úkP eYŪvq  
Míi tfZi cvtKi gtbvthwM wbioó Kitz mdj ntqtQb |

ivRbwiZ bwmRe mwnZ`i eo GKwU AskRtjo itqtQ | Zui Ggb tKvtrv wj Lub tbB  
thLvtrv tKvtrv-bv-tKvtrvfvte ivRbwiZi cKvk NtU bvB | 1965 mtj cKvkZ nq Zui  
ZZxq MíMš' 0بيت سيء السمعة (evqZz mvBwqBm mgŪAv) | mgKij xb

ivRbwiZ, mgvRe`e`vi Taw-wePziZ, kvmK#Mvöxi GK brqKZš; g#brfve m²fite  
wPwîZ ntq#Q GLv#b| G Mš'wZub Avcb `vk#K AbfwiZi K\_vl e³ Kti#Qb| tek  
KtqKwU M#i ivRbwiZi Zxe³ mgvtj vPbv a#wbZ ntq#Q AZ`š tRvvtj vfvte| Pj gvb  
ivRbwiZi Aw`iZv, ýzavi wj Lubi gva`tg t`wLtg w`tq#Qb we`gvb `bivR`Ki  
ivRbwiZi ýwZKi me w`K| weLq, tj v#K cKvkthwM` Kivi Rb` KL#bv cZxKx e³te`i  
Avk#b wbtq#Qb, KL#bv wbf#K Kj g`mwb#Ki fvgKvq AeZ#Y ntq#Qb| tKv#bv ivLxvK  
QvovB tmvRwvvcUv fvlvq `úo D`Pvi#Y ivRbwiZi mgvtj vPbv Kti#Qb|

Zui سائق (evqZzmvBwqBm mgwAv) Mí Mš'í GKwU Mí سائق  
القطار (mwiqK Avj -wKZvi)| M#i i Kwiwb#Z GK gvZij tij Pvj K #emvgvj ntq tij  
Pvj v#Q| tKv#bv t÷k#bB tm tij \_vgvq bv| `#Z MwZ#Z tij P#j | tm bv-tkvtb  
tKv#bv KgPvixi Awf#hwM, bv-tkvtb #Kv#bv hv#xi Awf#hwM| wbw#Z wec#`i w`#K Q#U  
P#j tm| GB `N#bvi nvZ t\_#K ev#vi Rb` hv#x#`i tctikwb te#o hvq| Ae#k#l  
Pvj #Ki tMwqvi Zwi Kvi#Y hv#xiv fqven `N#bvi wKvvi nq| G M#i tj LK %`#vPvix  
kvm#Ki weia#x tmv`Pvi ntq#Qb|

G Mš'í Avi I GKwU Mí خوف (LDd)| G M#i ivR%wZK Aw`iZv I mš#tmi wPî  
Z#j aiv ntq#Q| M#i i Kwiwb A#bKwv GiKg-Avj dviMvbw A#t#j i RbMY Avj -  
Avl qvi I Rjwb bvgK `Rb mšymxi AZ`vPv#i AwZ#| G A#t#j i Awaevmx#`i GB  
mšymxi Kej t\_#K ewP#q Zv#`i gv#S kmš#wi#wi#q Avb#Z `wqZi; tbq cwi k| t`Lv  
hvq, GKmgq cwi k| mšymxi fvgKvq AeZxY#nq| GwM#q P#j Kwiwb| GfvteB G  
Mš'í cZwU M#i B bwRe gvnd#Ri Mfxi Aš' #i cwiPq cvl qv hvq| cZxKvk#x  
Mí Kvi wnt#te wKí, #Y ej#Z n#e wZub mv\_#R `bv| Zui M#i i Kwiwb wbg#Y Zui  
`kwí K `ýZvi cwiPq w#q|

1969 mv#j cKwvKZ nq ا#خمارة القط الأسود (Lv#qiv Avj -wKZi Avj -Avml qv`) I  
ا#تحت المظلة (ZvnZv Avj -wghj m) bvgK `#Uv Mí Mš'í| bwRe gvnd#R wj wLZ  
Mí Mš'í g#a` ا#خمارة القط الأسود (Lv#qiv Avj -wKZi Avj -Avml qv`) bvbv Kvi#Y  
D#j L#hwM`| G Mš'í ا#خمارة القط الأسود (Lv#qiv Avj -wKZi Avj -Avml qv`)  
bvgK w#t#i vbg M#i `#vPvix kvm#Ki wnsmv-we#oI I fqsKi AvPvi-AvPi#Yi wPî Z#j  
aiv ntq#Q| جنة الأطفال (RvbwZ Avj -AvZdvj) bvgK msj vcag#M#i tj L#Ki ag#q  
wek#tmi Avfim cvl qv hvq| Zui الرجل السعيد (Avi ivRjy Avm-mvqx`) M#i Aw`i wP#E

fitei e<sup>w3</sup>t i gvbimK Aw<sup>-</sup>iZv cKvk tctqtQ| cny tki A<sup>-</sup>i<sup>wk</sup>Zv I mrgvbtj i  
I ci ubg<sup>g</sup> AZ<sup>v</sup>Pri I mvgvRK vek;Lj vi Kvnub weaz ntqtQ المتهم (Avj -g<sup>g</sup>vnvg)  
M<sup>r</sup>i |

تحت المظلة (ZvnZv Avj -ughj m) M<sup>r</sup>iU tQvUM<sup>r</sup>i i ÷vB<sup>t</sup>j i vPZ nqub| GvU  
i vPZ ntqtQ m<sup>u</sup>Y<sup>w</sup>fbæAvw<sup>z</sup>K I bZb tgRv<sup>r</sup>R| M<sup>r</sup>iU vixyvag<sup>g</sup> RrebUv thb  
vmtbgvi GKvU `k<sup>w</sup>Kve<sup>-</sup>| Pj gvb Rxe<sup>t</sup>bi h<sup>w</sup>šK RvUj Zv, c<sup>z</sup>Kj-Zv I Aw<sup>-</sup>iZvq f<sup>z</sup>tQ  
mgv<sup>r</sup>Ri c<sup>z</sup>ZvU tk<sup>w</sup>Y-tckvi gvby| mevB e<sup>-</sup>í v<sup>r</sup>tR<sup>t</sup>K v<sup>r</sup>tq| th hvi fvgKvq Avfbq  
K<sup>t</sup>i hv<sup>r</sup>Q| G M<sup>r</sup>iU c<sup>g</sup> tk<sup>w</sup>Yi Avf<sup>Á</sup> cvVK Qvor M<sup>r</sup>i i vel qe<sup>-</sup> tevSv c<sup>g</sup> Am<sup>æ</sup>|  
GvUB G M<sup>r</sup>i i bv<sup>w</sup> v<sup>r</sup>K | c<sup>k</sup>smZ GKvU M<sup>r</sup>i |

1971 m<sup>r</sup>tj cKvkZ nq b<sup>w</sup>Re gvnd<sup>r</sup>Ri (حكاية بلا بداية وبلا نهاية)  
(v<sup>n</sup>KvqvZ<sup>z</sup> vej v we<sup>-</sup>vqvZb I qv vej v v<sup>n</sup>vqvZb) I أشهر العسل (kvniæ Avj -  
AvQvj) M<sup>r</sup>i M<sup>s</sup> `j<sup>v</sup>| G M<sup>r</sup>i M<sup>s</sup> `j<sup>v</sup>Z b<sup>w</sup>Re gvnd<sup>r</sup> th vk<sup>r</sup> ,Yi cKvk NvU<sup>t</sup>qtQb  
Zv M<sup>s</sup> `j<sup>v</sup>K AvvaviY I Abb<sup>-</sup> M<sup>r</sup>i M<sup>š</sup>i Zv<sup>v</sup>j Kvq <sup>-</sup>v v<sup>r</sup>qtQ| D<sup>3</sup> M<sup>r</sup>i M<sup>š</sup>i  
v<sup>k</sup>tivbv<sup>g</sup> M<sup>r</sup>i `j<sup>v</sup>i K<sup>t</sup>j ei I vQj `xN<sup>c</sup>wi m<sup>t</sup>i |

(حكاية بلا بداية وبلا نهاية) (v<sup>n</sup>KvqvZ<sup>z</sup> vej v we<sup>-</sup>vqvZb I qv vej v v<sup>n</sup>vqvZb)  
M<sup>r</sup>i v<sup>r</sup>Zv GKRB f<sup>g</sup> m<sup>v</sup>aj g<sup>t</sup>Lvk D<sup>t</sup>qPb K<sup>t</sup>i<sup>t</sup>Qb| أشهر العسل (kvniæ Avj -  
AvQvj) M<sup>r</sup>i GK `u<sup>w</sup>Z I K<sup>t</sup>qKRB m<sup>s</sup>ymxi D<sup>Q</sup>:Lj Zv<sup>t</sup>K v<sup>n</sup>t<sup>i</sup> i vPZ ntqtQ M<sup>r</sup>i vU|  
Zv i vPZ Avi GK m<sup>g</sup>vi vU U<sup>t</sup>Rv<sup>v</sup> M<sup>r</sup>i v<sup>b</sup>vdqv dx Av<sup>-</sup> ` I i Avj -Lvigm I qv AvQ-  
Qj vQxb<sup>o</sup>| hv أشهر العسل (kvniæ Avj -AvQvj) M<sup>š</sup>i me<sup>k</sup>l M<sup>r</sup>i | G M<sup>r</sup>i t<sup>-</sup>Lv  
hvq tv<sup>g</sup>ov-<sup>t</sup>Pv<sup>g</sup>ov Niv<sup>v</sup>i GKRB c<sup>-</sup> e<sup>w3</sup> gvbimK Pvc mB<sup>t</sup>Z bv-tcti <sup>-</sup>ia<sup>w</sup>fite  
tf<sup>t</sup>½ c<sup>o</sup>| GKmgq tm AvZ<sup>h</sup>Z<sup>v</sup>i c<sup>-</sup> te<sup>t</sup>Q tbq| c<sup>q</sup>v<sup>k</sup>Zj v<sup>-</sup>v<sup>r</sup>tbi I ci t<sup>-</sup>k  
v<sup>t</sup>P S<sup>u</sup> v<sup>r</sup>tj Zvi gZ<sup>z</sup> nq| GLv<sup>t</sup>b tj LK te<sup>-</sup>bv<sup>e</sup>any<sup>z</sup> Kvnub vP<sup>v</sup>q<sup>t</sup>Yi me<sup>k</sup>l  
<sup>-</sup>y<sup>v</sup>i <sup>-</sup>v<sup>y</sup>i ti<sup>t</sup>L<sup>t</sup>Qb|

1973 m<sup>r</sup>tj cKvkZ nq Zv (الجريمة) (Avj -Rvigm) M<sup>r</sup>i | G M<sup>r</sup>i nZ<sup>v</sup>Kv<sup>t</sup>Di  
Z<sup>-</sup>š<sup>i</sup> b<sup>r</sup>tg cny tki n<sup>r</sup>tZ Kxfv<sup>t</sup>e v<sup>b</sup>iciva gvby Kó cvq Zv v<sup>b</sup>cy<sup>f</sup>v<sup>t</sup>e Z<sup>t</sup>j aiv  
ntqtQ| 1979 m<sup>r</sup>tj cKvkZ nq Zv (الحب فوق هضبة الهرم) (Avj -ue<sup>Y</sup>y  
dvDKv n<sup>v</sup>ve<sup>w</sup>Z Avj -n<sup>v</sup>vg) M<sup>s</sup>| G M<sup>š</sup> Zvi ti<sup>v</sup>gv<sup>w</sup>UK g<sup>t</sup>bi c<sup>w</sup>iPq cvl qv hvq| Zv  
ti<sup>v</sup>gv<sup>w</sup>UKZv thgb ü<sup>-</sup>q Q<sup>z</sup> hvq tZ<sup>g</sup>v<sup>b</sup> ev<sup>-</sup>éZv<sup>i</sup> aiv t<sup>-</sup>q GLv<sup>t</sup>b| ZvB GK<sup>w</sup> tK tc<sup>g</sup>-



fvtj veimv Ab`w`tk NvZ-cŃZNVZ | Pj gvb Rxełbi `tLKó, Avb`-te`bv meB wPwłZ  
 ntqtQ `y`wkíxi wj LubtZ |  
 Rxełbi tkl cŃšł Gtm iwPZ Zui mKj MšB thgb ZviłY" ficj tZgwb Rxełbi  
 ifc-im-MÜ w`tq fwtq Ztj tQb citZ citZ | tj LK wmwte wZwb cvłtKi mvgtb  
 Avil mgŃjij ntq DtvłQb |  
 bwiRe gvndR wQtb AmvaviY five I ifc-itmi AwaKvix | Avi G KvıłYB wZwb  
 mKj tK AwZmug Kti Avıve tQvUMłr AwłZxq `bv wmwte cŃZŃv jvf KiłZ mŃg  
 nb | bwiRe gvndR hLb tQvUMłr wj LłZ iiaKtib ZLb Avıve tQvUMłr wkı gvtb eü`i-  
 tčšłQ wMtqtQ | ZeyZwb tKb weL`vZ?  
 wglvBj bŃAvBgv, wReıvb Ljxj wReıvb, gvwŃš ZvBgj, gvngy ZvBgj Güw cŃZ`tkB  
 bwiRe gvndłRi AvłMKvi tQvUMłr Kvi huıv Avıve tQvUMłr i cŃwłj Z avıv tft½ bZb  
 avıv mwó KiłZ mŃg ntqtQb | bZb avıvi cŃZR G mKj tj LKł`i Qvıctq cieZR  
 th-łKvıbv tj LłKi cły KvwLZ `vb AwaKvi Kiv Kómvā" wQj | wKš bwiRe gvndR  
 Zui Młr mRbkxj Zv I ewk`xB hłMvıcthvMx wBZ" bZb wełtqi mwŃj b Nıwłtq Zui Mł  
 wPšłkxj cvłtKi gtb wRÁıvıv mwó KiłZ mŃg ntqtQb | Zui Młr tXtj w`tqtQb five  
 mwúł`i cŃPzŃ dtj mwov RvwMtqtQ cvłtKi tgav I gbbkxj Zıq | AbywZłK bıov  
 w`tqtQ cŃj fıte | dtj Zvi cteRvi tj LKł`i bZb ÷ıBj, AvšRwZR Dcjwä,  
 Młr i wkı ifc, Adžšłmwó mwłi meB wwb Kti w`tqtQ | ZıB Zui `vb cvłKgtb mevi  
 Dcti |

# Aóg Aa'iq

## ie»`bv\_ VvKzi e'w<sup>3</sup> I mwnvZ`K gvbm ch@j vPbv

c0g cwi t"Q`

e'w<sup>3</sup>gvbly intmte ie»`bv\_ VvKz

ie»`bv\_i e'w<sup>3</sup>gvbm ch@j vPbv Ki tZ RmxgD`&x#bi -@ZPvi Y- hLb Kuei ÔivLvj x0  
I ÔbKkx K<sub>u</sub>vi gvV0 cKvkZ ntjv ZLbI Zui KueL`vZ Pviw` tK Qnotq ctomb/  
KueZk<sup>3</sup> cKv tki Avb>` -tfc eB` yvnb A t bK AL`vZ-ueL`vZ mwnvZ`K t` i Dcnvi  
w` t q u Q t j b | Z v t ` i g Z v g Z R i v b i R b ` A t b t K i B Ô v i ` n t q u Q t j b | w K Š ` e B ` y v b v i  
l c i t K D B t K v t b v g Z v g Z w t j b b v | G m g q i e » ` b v \_ e v s j v t ` t k i Z i a y  
m w n v Z ` K t ` i w b t q G K u u m g v t j v P b v c 0 U w j t L u Q t j b | R m x g D ` & x b - G i w c 0 K u e  
i e » ` b v \_ | Z L t b v w Z i b K u e t K Z u i t j L v t K v t b v e B c v v b v b | Z u i A w f g v b w Q j h w  
m u Z ` B Z u i m w n t Z ` i g j ` \_ v t K Z t e K u e B G K w b Z t K t W t K c v v t e b | Z u i m w n t Z ` i  
K ` i n t e G Z u i w e k m | A e b x ` b v \_ V v K z i i c w i e v t i i m v t \_ R m x g D ` & x # b i m L ` w Q j  
A t b K w t b i | Z \_ w c l w Z i b D c h i P t K i g t Z v K u e i m v g t b n w R i n l q u l v A b v P Z e t j  
g t b K i t j b | A v o v j t \_ t K K u e i m e L e i B i v L t Z b | A v i A t c y v K i t Z b K u e i Z i d  
t \_ t K K L b Z u i W w K A v t m |

wKŠ` GB Awfgvb Avi tekw`b wUKj bv| hLb ie»`bv\_ Amý` n t q c o t j b w Z i b  
f v e t j b G f v t e g v b - A w f g v b K t i h w ` t i m t i \_ w K , A v g v i w c 0 K u e c i c v t i i W v t K  
m v o v w t q P t j h v b Z L b G B A Z B . e v m b v w P i K u j e t q t e o v t Z n t e | A v i t K v t b w ` b  
K u e i m v n P h g v f K i v m a e n t e b v | A e t k t l G K w b m e g v b - A w f g v t b i c v j v m v 1 / 2 K t i  
A e b x ` b v t \_ i t ` Š i n I t g v n b j v j M t 1 / 2 v c v a ` v t q i m v t \_ t ` L v K i t Z P j t j b K u e M t n |  
t g v n b j v j X K t j b N t i i w F Z t i | K u e e v B t i | w K Q y Y c t i t g v n b j v j G t m  
R m x g D ` & x b - t K w F Z t i w b t q t M t j b | w Z i b K u e t K m v j v g R i v b t j b | K w u Z n v t Z Z u i  
Ô b K k x K u v i g v V 0 I Ô i v L v j x 0 K v e ` ` y v n b K u e t K D c n v i w t j b | K u e Z m j y f A v P i t y  
i e » ` b v \_ e B ` y v n b G K U z t b t o t P t o R m x g D ` & x b - G i w t K Z w K t q e j t j b , Ô A v g v i  
g t b n t " Q Z u g e v s j v t ` t k i P v l x g y j g v b t ` i w e l q w j t L Q | t Z v g v i e B A w g c o e | 0

<sup>1</sup> Awbmý`v g v b , i e » ` b v \_ , ( c k v k k v j - e v b t k k 0 e Y 1375, X v K v , 0 2 1 1 U I t q R ) , c , 13



ZivntZ GZ cwieZ<sup>1</sup> I GZ KvUvKwU th t`uLqv AevK nBtZ nq| iex`bv<sub>i</sub>  
mRbk<sup>3</sup> uKQzKwi qv ZB nBtZ RvmbZ bv|<sup>1</sup>

iex`bv<sub>i</sub> ubKU hLb RmxgD`&xb-Gi hvZvqvZ i iæ ntjv Gici t`tK RmxgD`&xb  
hLb Kwei mvt\_ t`Lv Ki tZ AvmtZb iex`bv\_ Zui mvt\_ ZrKijxb mgtaqi un`y  
gryj gvb mgm`v ubtq Avtj vPbv Ki tZb| iex`bv\_ etj b, 0t`kj vBtqi KvW Rvuj qv  
u`tj B th Nti Av<sub>3</sub> b jv tM Zvi Kvi Y tmB Nti i gta" eûKij Av<sub>3</sub> b mivÂZ uQj | hviv  
ej tZ Pvb, Avgiv mevB uqj ugk ntq uQj g fvi j, Bsti R GtmB Avgv t` i gta" Av<sub>3</sub> b  
amitq u`j, Zui v mgm`u tK Gvotq th tZ Pvb|<sup>2</sup> (iex`bv\_: 20)

Kue RmxgD`&xb etj b, GKw` b et`gvZig&MvbWU ubtq Kwei mvt\_ Avtj vPbv ntjv|  
uZub etj b, 0et`gvZig&MvbWU thfvte AvtQ, tZvgiv gryj gvbiv GRb" AvciE Ki tZ  
cvi | Kvi Y G Mvtb tZvgv t` i aggZ y`xamI qvi ht`o Kvi Y AvtQ|<sup>3</sup>

Amv`u` uqK uPstPZbvi teovRij uQba Kti uZub th KZUv gvbueK ntq DVtZ  
tctitQb Zui tj Lbx B Gi mvy" enb Kti | RmxgD`&xb-Gi mvt\_ hLub Kwei t`Lv  
ntZv ZLub uZub miv`u` uqK cñ½ Ztj ubtq AvmtZb| `Rtbi mvt\_ K\_v ntZv G  
ubtq| GKw` b iex`bv\_ etj b, 0tKb th gvbly GtKi Acivtai Rb" AcitK gvti! I  
t`tki gryj gvbiv un`y i gvij, ZvB Gt`tki un`y v GLvbKvi ubixn gryj gvb t` i  
tgti Zvi cZer` Kite, GB eeP gtbveEi nvZ t`tK t`k uKfvte D`vi cvte ej tZ  
cvi ? t`L, Kx mvgvb" e`vci ubtq Kjn nq| Miæ tKvi evbx ubtq, gmwR t` i mvgtb  
evRbv ubtq, GKUv ci tK i yv Ki tZ KZ gvbly tK gvbly nZ`v Ki tQ|<sup>3</sup> (iex`bv\_: 22)

G RvZxq e`vci ubtq Avtj vPbv Ki tZ Ki tZ GK ch t q uZub D t E u R Z ntq th tZb| G  
mgq iex`bv<sub>i</sub> kixiUv fvtjv hwwQj bv| c0qB Amy`\_ vK tZb uZub| GKw` b  
RmxgD`&xb Kwei mvt\_ t`Lv Ki tZ hwwQ t j b, ZLb Kuecy i\_x`bv\_ ZvtK tWtK  
ej t j b, 0GLb eveli kixi Amy`| Avcbv tK t`L t j B evel un`y gryj gvb mgm`v ubtq  
Avtj vPbv Kti b ZvtZ gv tS gv tS eoB D t E u R Z ntq ctob| Amy` kixi GB D t E Rbv  
LgB y`WZKi | Avciub uKQz b eveli mt½ t`Lv Ki t b bv|<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Avmbm34vgrb, iex`bv\_, (cKvKvKij -evBtk k0eY 1375, XivKv, 0zWU I t qR), c., 18

<sup>2</sup> c0\_ B, c., 20

<sup>3</sup> c0\_ B, c., 22

## gryj gvbť` i m<sup>au</sup>tK<sup>o</sup>fz avi Yv

Kue emotZ mvariYZ in>`ycwĪKv,tjv cotZb| in>`z̄ev`x GB cwĪKv,tjv Kuegťb gryj gvbť` i m<sup>au</sup>tK<sup>o</sup>GKaitbi fz avi Yvi m<sup>u</sup>o Kti uQj | gryj gvb<sup>x</sup> cwĪKv,tjv mvariYZ Kuei nvZ ch<sup>sl</sup> tc<sup>š</sup>QZ bv| gvtSgta` Kvtj fvt`<sup>a</sup> `yGK Kuc nqtZv-ev tc<sup>š</sup>QZ| h<sup>w</sup> Zui fz avi Yvi msMZ Kvi Y Ztj aiv thZ Zvntj uZub Zv mstkrab Kti ubťZb| gryj gvb<sup>x</sup> cwĪKv Ges Zvť` i KvhRjvc m<sup>au</sup>tK<sup>o</sup>Kuei KvtQ m<sup>w</sup>MK Z` KGB tc<sup>š</sup>QZ| Avi G KviťYB Kue hLbB RmxD`&xtbi t`Lv tctZb ZLb evsj vť`tki gvbly Z\_v in>`ygryj gvbť` i m<sup>u</sup>g<sup>w</sup>MK Ae`v Rvbi Rb` e`vKz ntq cotZb|

Kuei gťb GKť`k`k<sup>p</sup> in>`z̄ji `vb uQj bv| ag<sup>o</sup>l mgvRe`e`vi mgvtj vPbv KiťZ gryj gvbť` i gta` hviv `faxb gZev` ubtq KvR KiťZb Zvť` i c<sup>š</sup>Z Kuei gťb Mfxi Abj<sup>M</sup> uQj | uKš` Kuei ctjy Kvtiv m<sup>au</sup>tK<sup>o</sup>e`w<sup>3</sup>MZfvte uKQzRťb tbl qv m<sup>ae</sup> uQj bv| uZub tKej Zvť` i m<sup>au</sup>tKB fvtjv Kti RvťZb hviv Kuei ubKU AvmZ| GB eqtm Gtm Kuei gťZv GKRb tj vťki ctjy Gi tPtq teuk uKQzRvbi m<sup>ae</sup>l uQj bv| tmB mgtq m<sup>au</sup>u<sup>a</sup> v<sup>u</sup>qKZvi fZ tStK etm<sup>u</sup>Qj ctjiv t`tk| in>`ygryj gvb `řlv tk<sup>o</sup>YťZ f<sup>w</sup>M ntq mgvtR m<sup>au</sup>u<sup>a</sup> v<sup>u</sup>qKZvi velev<sup>o</sup>ú Qmotq ctouQj | gy<sup>3</sup>Pš<sup>li</sup> Avakvi x gvbly,tjv Gi t\_ťki řin<sup>v</sup>B cvqub| uKš` i ex`gťb Gi tKvťbv cřve ctoub| Kue RmxD`&xb hLbB tKvťbv KvtR Zui KvtQ uMtqtOb uZub Zv n<sup>w</sup>mg<sup>l</sup> Kti w`tqtOb| uZub gryj gvb etj ZvťK `ři m<sup>w</sup>iťq t`bub| m`vi G.Gd ingvb ZLb XvKv vekte`vj tqi vřim| uZub Kue RmxD`&xb-ťK ejťjb, ōi ex`bv\_ A\_ev AbťKvb bvgKiv tj vťki KvQ t\_ťK h<sup>w</sup> tKvťbv e`w<sup>3</sup>MZcĪ AvbťZ cvi, Zte GLvťb evsj v vefvřM tZvgvi Rb` KvtRi tPóv KiťZ c<sup>w</sup>mi | ō<sup>1</sup>

GgG cik Kivi ci e<sup>w</sup>u`b aři RmxD`&xb řekvi Nři teovťb| tKv\_vl tKvťbv KvtRi mřhv<sup>M</sup> ntjv bv| m`vi G.Gd ingvb-Gi civgk<sup>o</sup>uZub K<sup>w</sup>ij KvZvq Gtm Zvi tPbvRvbi `řb evsj v m<sup>w</sup>ntZ`i w`Kcvťj i mř\_l t`Lv Kiťjb| ZeyuKQzZ uKQB ntjv bv| e`w<sup>3</sup>MZcĪ tZv w`ťjbB bv, Avakš` ejťjb, ōAvRKvj m<sup>au</sup>u<sup>a</sup> v<sup>u</sup>qKZvi w`b|

<sup>1</sup> Avmbř<sup>4</sup>v<sup>u</sup>g<sup>v</sup>b, i ex`bv\_, (cKvkKvj -evBťk k<sup>o</sup>eY 1375, XvKv, ōř<sup>u</sup>U l řqR), c., 30

wekte`ij tq Avgvi kĀai Afve bvB| nqZ tKvĭbv wv`yGB KvĭRi Rb` tPón KiĭQ|  
 tZvgvĭK e`w<sup>3</sup>MZcĀ w`tj wv`yKvMR,wj AvgvĭK Mij w`tq Av`iivLte bv|<sup>1</sup>  
 Zvĭ i Gĭnb AvPiĭY RmĭgD`&xb gvivZĭK Kó tĭtj b| wZwb fvetj b Zviv tZv mevB  
 Avgvi Rvbvĭkvbv| Avgvq KZ fĭtj veĭtm| Avmĭg gĭj gvb etj cĀ w`tZ i wR nĭj v bv|  
 Zvĭ i GKw cĀĭZB Avgvi KvR nĭq thZ| Giv mv<sup>u</sup> vĭqKZvi bvĭg GgbUv Kij |  
 GKevi wZwb fvetj b Kue, iai KvĭQ hvB| Avevi fvetj b wMĭqB-ev Kx nĭe| RvĭZ tZv  
 wZwb| wv`y wZwb| nqĭZv wdvĭ tq t`teb| Gi tPĭq eis bv-hvĭ qv fĭtj v| Zeygb gvĭb  
 bv| GKevi bv nq t`wL GB gvbyUvi KvĭQ wMĭq| GKw mĭzvĭi k| wZwb kvĭšĭbĭKZĭb  
 QĭU tMĭj b| Zvĭ eYĭvq,ŏmKvj ĩej v| Kue evi v`vq eimqvwQĭj b ce<sup>9</sup>MMĭb i wĭj v tĭvi  
 tgĭL tgĭL Zvi b. vi KvR ZLb| eĭU Kwi qv Pij qvĭQ| mvĭĭbi eMvĭb cvLi Mvĭb  
 dĭj i iĭ½ Zvi mĭvĭtm AvovAvno Pij qvĭQ| mĭj vg RvbvBqv Kuei mvĭĭb wMĭq  
 `wvBj vg| Kkĭ cĀkĭe DĒi w`tq KueĭK Avgvi AvMĭĭbi K\_v eĭj j vg| Kue ZrĭYv  
 Zvĭ cĀBĭFU tĭtĭUvix kĀAvĭgq PĭeZĭ<sup>9</sup> gnĭkqĭK Avgvi Rb` GKLvbv mĭzvĭi kcĀ  
 wj wLqv AvmbĭZ wĭb`R w`tj b| ZLb Avmĭg KueĭK mg`iK\_v Lĭj qv eĭj j vg, Kij KvZvi  
 `BRb mĭvĭtZ`i w`Kcĭj i agvĀ mv<sup>u</sup> vĭqK KvĭĭY AvgvĭK th mĭzvĭi k t`b bvB, G  
 K\_vĭ eĭj j vg| mg`i vĭbqv Kue eoB gbtĭYwvBĭj b|<sup>2</sup>  
 KueZvi AĭbK wĭlq wĭtq Kue, iai mĭt\_ K\_v nĭZv AvĭiK ZiĭY Kue RmĭgD`&xb-  
 Gi| RmĭgD`&xb GKw b KueĭK eĭtj b, B`vbx GK`j AvZ AvĭbK Kwi e D`q  
 nĭtqĭQ hviv etj Pĭ, Zviv, tRvrbv l gMĭbqĭYi tĭB cĭjĭbv Dcgv-Aj ¼avi Avi Pj ĩe  
 bv| Dcgv-Aj ¼avi e`envĭte bZbZjAvĭbĭZ nĭe| hviv M`ĭK KueZvi gĭZv Kĭi mvRvĭZ  
 Pvq| wvR`^eĭkĭŏi tKvĭbv QvCB tĭB hvĭ`i KueZvq| A\_P Giv Kue! ZLb Kue  
 eĭtj b, ŏGRb` wPšĭ Kĭi v bv| GUv GKUv mĭgvĭqK NUbv| tgĭKi Av`i teĭk w`b Pĭj  
 bv| GK\_v Rvĭbv, fĭj tĭLĭKi msL`v mKj Kvĭj B Lĭ Kg| Avi g` tĭLĭKiv msL`vq  
 thgb teĭk, k<sup>w</sup> i `vcĭU tZgĭb AĭRq| wKš`Kvĭj i gnvcĭjĭd wPi Kvj B tĭB Aĭ msL`K  
 `9<sup>9</sup> tĭLĭKĭ`i nĭtZ Rq cZvKv Zĭj t`q|<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Avmbmĭyavĭrb, i eĭv`bv\_, (cĀkĭkKij -evĭĭk kĀeY 1375, XvKv, ŏĭwU l ĩqR), c., 31

<sup>2</sup> cĀ, B, c., 31-32

<sup>3</sup> cĀ, B, c., 34



# WZxq cwi t"Q`

## mwnwZ`K gvbm gj`vqb

meRvtj i evsj v M`"mwnwZ`i Ab`Zg tkD tj LK i ex`bv\_ VvKz, wekij mwnwZ` m`fi, weiq `eiP`T`, HKH`I fiveKí bviq mgýfjcx gnuKvtj i M`"`bv wZub, fivem`úf` Zui mómwnwZ` wekfmwnwZ` GK wekij Avavi | Mí, Dcb`vm, bviUK, cEÜ, Rxeb`-SjZ, wPwCÎ, AvZfRxebx, KweZv Avi msMxwZ wbgPÝ KtiwQb wewPÎ gvÎvi M`"k|x| i ex`<sup>a</sup> M`"i wZ weeZfbi tfZi w`tq µgk GwMwq PtwQ, t`tg w`vKwb tKv\_vl | wekI tKv`bv i wZ, wZ`bZb fiveKí bvi GtK wbgPÝ KtiwQb wR`M`"k|x|

cKvmb, agePvi Ges mgvR ms`v`ti i KviwY Avtj wnoZ tmB Dwbk kZtK t`Lv w`tj v M`"i; Ges ZLb t`tKB evsj v M`" fivM n`tq tMwQ `B wecixZ tgiwZ | mgvR, t`k I ag`m`úfK`ZK`weZK`Ges gytivPK bKkv I cÎvej i iPbviq M`"i AwZm<sup>2</sup> e`eavb cieZKvtj fvlvi wZi `B `Zš; weKvkarivi m`¼Zen | Kvj µtg, GB Dfq avivtK AvZf`Kti we`v`m`Mti i wKíx nvZ evsj v M`" w`tq Gtj v tcj e w`Zv, wKwí Z jveY; M`" n`tq DVj mvejxj | Zvici AvtK we`sq w`tq Avmtj v ÔAvj vtj i Nti i `jvj Ô mgKvjxb Rxeftbi cÎZfvm D<sup>3</sup>4j n`tj v K`ewj i Kk|x cÔqvM | evsj v M`" A½xKvi Kij v Ô`ši Yxq mimZv I cÔYešZvÔ | we`v`m`Mi I c`vixPw<sup>1</sup>- G `B fvlwKíxi M`"i avivtK GKwîZ Kti `Zš; M`"i GK PgKcÔ Ges ü`q`úkP ifc Drmwí Z n`tj v ew`tgi nvtZ | fiveKí bvi AbMvqx Kti i ex`bv\_ GB M`" Rto w`tj b m<sup>2</sup>Zv Ges cMvoZv; evsj v M`" n`tq DVtj v m`¼Zgq I msMxZgq, eúeYfkwfZ I KviaKvhgüDZ |<sup>2</sup>

cÔ\_ tPšajx K`ewj i Av`tj M`" w`tq Avtmb SYf cEvngrvZv; evsj v M`" At½ Rovq kwYZ GK cÔiZv | wZwi`tki `ktK wKíxi e`w<sup>3</sup>gvb`mi Avšli tcÔ Yiq gRZev Avj x wK Abèvk¼i, GKRB m`x`bv\_ wK GKRB ex`t`e evsj v M`"i weKv`k i v`Lb Avõh`cÔZfvi `fyi; M`" n`tq Dtv tKšwYK, eúgvwîK Ges mvejxj | we`v`m`Mi Ges ew`tgp`f M`"i wZ Ges Avj vj x úZvqx i wZ t`tK Avi`cKti cÔ\_ tPšajx I wZwi`tki

<sup>1</sup> c`vixPw: evsj v mwnwZ`i cÔg Jcb`wmmK ( 22 tk RjvB, 1814- 23 btf`f, 1883) |

<sup>2</sup> gbx i tPšajx 1984 : i Pbej x ZZxq LÐ (XvKv, evsj v GKv`Wgx), c., 42





br Ges GB mĀ Abryvĭti i ex`bvĭ\_i tQvUMĭĭK GKUZZjvi wĭĭK tVĭj t`eri tSĭK nq  
Avqvĭ`i |<sup>1</sup>

i ex`bvĭ\_i Avĭ cĕP Mĭ` ewĭgPĭ`ĭ fvlvi xĭZ I M`%kxi cĕve jÿ Kiv tMĭj I  
Kij cĭi μgvq AvZ Aĭ mgĭqi gĭa` wZĭb G cĕveĭK KvUĭĭq wR`^M` fvlv Avĭe<sup>vi</sup>  
KiĭZ mÿg nb| i ex`M` AvĭeMkvmmZ, ü`ĭqi Mfxi t\_ĭĭK Drmvi Z, tmB mĭĭ\_  
KĭeZicĕY| AvRĭeb wZĭb Kĭei gĭZv M` wĭj tĭĭQb| M`wĭkĭx wĭtmĭte GUVB Kĭei  
wR`Zv| GRb`B tevanq AZĭP>`<sup>a</sup> B<sup>2</sup> i ex`bvĭ\_i M`ĭĭK ŪgnvKĭei M`Ū etj  
AvL`wĭqZ KĭiĭQb|

mPbv cĕe<sup>vi</sup>i ex`bvĭ\_i Dcb`vĭmi msL`v wQj wZb| ŪKĭaĭvŪ, ŪeD VĭKĭvYwi nvŪŪ I  
ŪivRwĭŪ| ŪKĭaĭvŪi cĕe<sup>vi</sup>vsj v Dcb`vm ewĭgPĭ`ĭ nvĭZ tcwĭĭq GĭmĭQ tivgvĭĭYi c\_|  
i ex`bv\_ ewĭgx-ĭivgvĭĭY bv-Rwĭĭq bZĭ` wĭqZ; wĭĭq wbg<sup>vi</sup> Kĭĭj b bZĭ Dcb`vm-wĭl q  
I cĕKĭĭY thLĭĭb tQvUMĭĭi gĭZvB cĕavb` tcj Zui Kĭe`-AwfĀZv; t`ĭek ivq hv  
kbv<sup>3</sup> Kĭĭb ŪĭmB j xj vqgZv, tmB tmŠ`h<sup>vi</sup>tmB wĭ:mĭZvŪ AwfAvq|<sup>3</sup>

tQvU tQvU evĭK` Dcb`vĭm i ex`bv\_ wbg<sup>vi</sup> Kĭĭb bZĭ GK aiĭbi M`, cĕvngvbZv I  
Kĭe%kxiB hvi gj`ewĭkŵ`| nĭ`^evK`, wĭμqvĭĭ`i eĭj e`envi Kĭĭ ei x`bv\_ ŪKĭaĭvi  
fvlvi mÿ, Ū` I MwZ AvbĭZ LgB mĭPŵ ntĭĭQb| mĭ`n tbB, G cĕP Dcb`vm  
ZLĭbv AR<sup>vi</sup> KiĭZ cĭĭi wĭ Jcb`vmK eĭgwmĭKZv| ZeyKĭyvi fvlv`^Q`MwZ,  
mnRmij I Avŵ<sup>vi</sup>nxb|

cĭg cĕP i ex`<sup>a</sup>Dcb`vĭmi M`ixĭZi Ab`Zg`ewĭkŵ` nĭ`^I mij evĭK`i Kĭjx  
e`envi | hwĭ I GB ixĭZ ewĭgPĭ`ĭ Avĭe<sup>vi</sup>, Zĭe i ex`bv\_ ewĭgPĭ`B mxgvex  
\_vĭKb bv, tmLĭĭb mĀvi Kĭĭb bZĭ-%ewĭkŵ` Ū`-`Ū`b Ges mvej xj MwZgqZv|<sup>4</sup>

wZĭb th me<sup>vi</sup> GKB ixĭZ e`envi KĭĭĭQb Zv-I bq| Zui mĭvĭĭZ` t`Lv hvq, GKĭU`xN<sup>vi</sup>  
RĭUj wĭgkŵevĭK`i cĭi nVvR KĭĭqKĭU cĭ`i mgšĭq GKĭU mij evĭK` mxgvnxb`ewĭPĭ`  
wĭĭq Dcĭw`Z nĭjv| ewĭPĭmĭŵi G aiĭbi tKŠkj evsj vmvĭvĭZ` D<sup>vi</sup>wĭeb Kiv tKej  
i ex`bvĭ\_i cĭĭyB m<sup>vi</sup>e ntĭĭQ|

<sup>1</sup> eye i Pbvĭj x-10, c., 115

<sup>2</sup> AZĭP>`<sup>a</sup> B ( 12 gvP<sup>vi</sup>, 1884- 12 tdeĭqwi, 1961)|

<sup>3</sup> t`ĭek evq 1978, i ex`<sup>a</sup>I Zui Avĭ M`, ( Kĭ KĭZv, tK.wc evMPx GŪ tKĭvĭvĭx), c., 88

<sup>4</sup> evsj v GKĭvWwgi wĭĭe`b: i ex`bv\_ VĭKĭ, (cĕKĭvKĭj -2011, XĭKv, evsj v GKĭvWwgi), c., 435

ŌAšćteP K<sub>vmvntZ</sub>" iex`bv\_ ubgP KtiQb m<sup>u</sup>Y<sup>o</sup>bZb GK ikí fzb, RmZK-  
AvšR<sup>o</sup>ZK bvbv NUbv I c<sup>o</sup>YZv G mgq iex`g<sup>o</sup>vmtK ifcvšti Z Kti Ges vZvb  
g<sup>o</sup>Lv<sup>o</sup> nb m<sup>u</sup>Y<sup>o</sup>bZb GK RxbvR<sup>o</sup>Avmvi | Bsj`v<sup>o</sup>Ui gg<sup>o</sup>Jj--AvnZ Rxbfvebv,  
t<sup>o</sup>vtej cy`vi c<sup>o</sup>BRvbZ vek<sup>o</sup>vqZteva, mf`ZvelqK Ag<sup>o</sup>½j Avk<sup>o</sup>¼v, `f`tki  
AegvbbvKi mgv<sup>o</sup>tj vPbv, c<sup>o</sup>g vek<sup>o</sup>h<sup>o</sup>xi vek<sup>o</sup>ch<sup>o</sup>Gme NUbv-`N<sup>o</sup>Obvi ivm<sup>o</sup>vqbK  
c<sup>o</sup>Z<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>mqvq beRvZ iex`fPZbv vek<sup>o</sup>cyteM avegvb ntjv m<sup>o</sup>oi bZb mvabvq,  
Rxbvtj v<sup>o</sup>KZ bZb ZUm<sup>o</sup>qvq|<sup>1</sup>

iex`bv<sub>i</sub> tkl<sup>o</sup>v`tki M<sup>o</sup> , tj vtZ c<sup>o</sup>avb" tctqtQ e<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>3 i m<sup>o</sup>½ c<sup>o</sup>v I mg<sup>o</sup>oi msNI Ges  
mKj mbvZb gj`tev<sup>o</sup>ai vek<sup>o</sup>v` I e<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>3 i vek<sup>o</sup>tn| dtj iex`<sup>o</sup>QvUM<sup>o</sup>ti i velq I fve-  
cvi gDj MZ GB bZbZ; M<sup>o</sup>ti i fvlv-i<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>ZtZI G<sup>o</sup>tm<sup>o</sup>Q c<sup>o</sup>vi eZ<sup>o</sup>, M<sup>o</sup> I tgvo v<sup>o</sup>tqtQ bZb  
c<sup>o</sup> , A<sup>o</sup>½v<sup>o</sup>Kvi KtiQ bZb bZb P<sup>o</sup>vi T`%<sup>o</sup>vk<sup>o</sup>tó"|<sup>2</sup>

tev`<sup>o</sup> tj qvi<sup>o</sup>3 thgb M` I c` Dfq Gj vKv<sup>o</sup>ZB GKB fvlv, GKB vPš<sup>o</sup>, GKB ifcvP<sup>o</sup>ti  
e<sup>o</sup>envi KtiQb, iex`bv<sub>i</sub> ty<sup>o</sup>ti tZgbvUj y<sup>o</sup> Kiv hvq| dtj M` I c<sup>o</sup> i e<sup>o</sup>eavi  
N<sup>o</sup>P GKvKvi | GB Dfq i<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>Zi mgš<sup>o</sup>q m<sup>o</sup>oi ntqtQ Avi GKvU bZb i<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>Z-iex`M`| hv  
M` I bq, c` I bq-Ōfvlvi tklZg f<sup>o</sup>½-g<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>ZgZx civ-evK<sup>o</sup>| GfvteB mvayl Pij Z  
M` i<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>Zi kZv<sup>o</sup>x engvb mKj Ō<sup>o</sup>Øi Aemvb NvU<sup>o</sup>q iex`bv\_ M<sup>o</sup> , f<sup>o</sup>Qi tkl<sup>o</sup>v`tk G<sup>o</sup>tm  
ubgP KtiQb Zvi GKvšB v<sup>o</sup>R`M` i<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>Z, thLv<sup>o</sup>tb mvayAvi Pij Z AvteM Avi vek<sup>o</sup>v,  
M` Avi c` v<sup>o</sup>gtj -v<sup>o</sup>gtk GKvKvi |<sup>4</sup>

iex`<sup>o</sup>K<sub>vmvntZ</sub>"i AšćteB Jcb`v<sup>o</sup>mK vnt<sup>o</sup>te Zvi D<sup>o</sup>¾j Avve<sup>o</sup>ve j y<sup>o</sup> Kiv hvq| G  
`ti i Av<sup>o</sup>Kvsk m<sup>o</sup>oi AvZ<sup>o</sup>K<sub>bgj</sub>-K| ev v<sup>o</sup>R Rev<sup>o</sup>btZ tj Lv| ZvB K<sub>i<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>Z</sub> c<sup>o</sup>avb"  
tcj AšćteP Ō<sup>o</sup>tk<sup>o</sup>ti i K<sup>o</sup>veZv<sup>o</sup> Dcb`v<sup>o</sup>mi GB Ab<sup>o</sup>vg M` %<sup>o</sup>kj x e<sup>o</sup>vL`vK<sup>o</sup>í ey<sup>o</sup> e em<sup>o</sup>y  
v<sup>o</sup>t<sup>o</sup>3 gš<sup>o</sup> "š<sup>o</sup>i Y<sup>o</sup>thvM"- Ō<sup>o</sup>tm mgq thUv Av<sup>o</sup>vt` i g<sup>o</sup>tb met<sup>o</sup>P<sup>o</sup>q PgK j v<sup>o</sup>M<sup>o</sup>tq<sup>o</sup>Qj tmUv  
tk<sup>o</sup>ti i K<sup>o</sup>veZvi fvlv| Agb M<sup>o</sup>vZkxj, Agb `y<sup>o</sup>Zgq fvlv evsj v m<sup>o</sup>vntZ" BvZc<sup>o</sup>te<sup>o</sup>Av<sup>o</sup>g<sup>o</sup>i v  
c<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>vb| ...evsj v M` GZ mvej xj ntZ cv<sup>o</sup>ti, Zv<sup>o</sup>K th B<sup>o</sup>Q g<sup>o</sup>Zv evK<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>tv, tnj v<sup>o</sup>tv,  
f<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>gov<sup>o</sup>tv m<sup>o</sup>e, Av<sup>o</sup>tj v-Qv<sup>o</sup>qvi GZ m<sup>o</sup>2 `li Zv<sup>o</sup>Z aiv c<sup>o</sup>o, tLj v Kti Q<sup>o</sup> i GB

<sup>1</sup> mg` AvKig t<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>mb : 1981, iex`bv<sub>b</sub> Dcb`v<sup>o</sup>m : fPZvtj vK I ikí ifc, (XvKv, XvKv vek<sup>o</sup>te`ij q), c., 262

<sup>2</sup> evsj v GKv<sup>o</sup>W<sup>o</sup>gi v<sup>o</sup>te`b: iex`bv\_ V<sup>o</sup>Kž, (c<sup>o</sup>KvK<sup>o</sup>vj -2011, XvKv, evsj v GKv<sup>o</sup>W<sup>o</sup>g), c., 439

<sup>3</sup> Kvj <sup>o</sup>er`<sup>o</sup> tj qvi : d<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup>m m<sup>o</sup>vntZ"i Ab`Zg K<sup>o</sup>ve I Ab<sup>o</sup>vg`K ( 9 G<sup>o</sup>v<sup>o</sup> , 1821-31 Av<sup>o</sup>M<sup>o</sup> , 1867)|

<sup>4</sup> evsj v GKv<sup>o</sup>W<sup>o</sup>gi v<sup>o</sup>te`b: iex`bv\_ V<sup>o</sup>Kž, (c<sup>o</sup>KvK<sup>o</sup>vj -2011, XvKv, evsj v GKv<sup>o</sup>W<sup>o</sup>g), c., 440

ˆeirkó | Zv Avgiv Gi AvtM fvefZI cwiub | ZvB GB eBvU nvfZ tctq hv` Avgv` i  
gʔbi Ae`v P`vcg`vʔbi<sup>1</sup> tnvgi cvVtšKxUʔmi gʔZv nʔq \_vʔK, ZvʔZ AevK nevi vKQz  
tbB|ʔ

## cĪmvinZ

cĪmvinʔZi GK vekvj `vb `Lj Kʔi AvʔQb iex`bv\_ | mvinZ`Rxeʔb vZub tgvU  
KZ, tʔv cĪ vj ʔLʔQb Zv thgb KvI cʔy Rvbn mʔe bq ʔZgb Zvi mivK msL`v vbyq  
Kivl `jan | iex`aMʔelK W. ʔMSZgP`a Zui ōiex`a cĪvej x : Z`cÄxŃ mc-GBW. vW  
m`ʔf`mvgvqKcʔi evʔiI Mʔfʔ vPvctʔi eYvvgj-K Zvij Kv `Zvi KʔiʔQb | Zui  
msMvxZ GB Zvij Kvq 1972 mij chšPvi nvRvi GKʔkv-i gʔZv gʔvZ vPvi mŪvb  
tctqʔQb |

1912 mʔj ōvQbēTŌ bʔtg Kuei Rxeʔkvq ZuiB mʔv`bvq cKvKZ nq GB  
cĪmsKj b | 1960 mʔj KvbnB mvgšʔ, ōvQbēTvej xŃ bʔtg iex`el`cviZ`Mʔtgj vq  
252 vU cĪ vʔq tei Kʔib GKvU cĪmsKj b |

Ōfvbʔmstni c`vej xŃ Ges ōct\_ I cʔ\_i cŃšŃ bʔtg `v vPvctʔi msKj b tei Kʔib  
Kue vʔRB | 1935-G iex`bv\_ -aRvUcŃv` gʔLvca`vq cĪvj vc ōmʔ I m½vZŌ bʔtg  
cKvK cvq | 1938-G ōcĪaviŃ vʔivbʔtg vZb LʔŌ ōvQbēTŌ, Ōfvbʔmstni cĪvej xŃ  
Ges ōct\_ I cʔ\_i cŃšŃ GKʔĪ AvZ`cKvK Kʔi |

evsjv GKvʔWgx 1985 ʔZ cKvK Kʔi gʔj gʔvʔ`i KvʔQ ʔj Lv ōiex`bv`i GK, "Q  
cĪŌ | 1942 ʔ\_ʔK 1995 chš vefviZx MʔefvM ʔlvj LʔŌi ōvPvctʔŌ cKvK  
KʔiʔQb |<sup>4</sup>

iex`bv`i vPvctʔi gʔa` mvinʔZ`i th Kx cwiqvY vclq j kvvqZ AvʔQ Zv Zui `y  
GKvU vPv bv cotj tevSvB hvʔe bv | vPvctʔ mʔvʔK`qs Kue hv eʔj ʔQb Zv nʔj v-  
Ōhv ʔKvʔbv ʔj LʔKi me ʔʔq fvʔjv ʔj Lv Zvi vPvʔZB ʔ`Lv hvq Zvntj GB eʔʔZ  
nʔe th, hvʔK vPv ʔj Lv nʔ`Q Zvi I GKvU vPv ʔj Lvevi ygvZv AvʔQ |<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Avbn P`vcgvb: hʔv ʔvŃ`ʔMʔZvi nI qv i vKqvri GKRB, BPI | Rbʔ: 23 tdeʔvvi, 1982 |

<sup>2</sup> exʔ`e emy1962 : K`mvinZ` (Kj KvZv, vD GR), c., 67

<sup>3</sup> KvbnB mvgšʔ iex`aMʔelK`i gʔa` cŃxvZg cŌARb | gʔZ: 3 Aʔvvi, 1995 |

<sup>4</sup> evsjv GKvʔWvgi vʔe`b: iex`bv\_ vKž, (cKvKkvj -2011, XvKv, evsjv GKvʔWgx), c., 461

<sup>5</sup> Bv`iv ʔ`extK, 7 Aʔvvi 1894

gqgbimstni tMšixcxi Riug`vi Kb`v tngševjvK Zui wPwvi DĒti Kwei Mí-  
 Dcb`v̄mi w̄el̄tq tek w̄KQz, iaz̄c̄Y°Z\_ c̄K̄vk K̄tīt̄Qb : GKUv K\_v ḡtb tīt̄Lv, Mí  
 d̄t̄Uw̄M̄d̄ bq| hv t`t̄Lw̄Q hv tR̄t̄b̄w̄Q Zv hZ̄ȳY bv ḡti w̄M̄t̄q fZ nq, GKUvi m̄t̄½  
 Av̄tīKUv w̄ḡt̄k w̄M̄t̄q c̄w̄Uvq w̄ḡt̄j w̄D̄Z̄x̄q̄evi c̄ĀZ; c̄vq ZZ̄ȳY M̄t̄í Z̄v̄t` i `vb nq bv|  
 t̄M̄viv I t̄b̄Š̄K̄v̄w̄wei K̄íbv m̄ūȲB Av̄ḡvi gv\_v̄i t\_̄t̄K t̄ew̄it̄q̄P| Ggb N̄t̄Ūt̄Q et̄j  
 R̄mb̄t̄b w̄K̄Š̄ N̄Ūt̄j w̄K̄ n̄t̄Z c̄vi Z t̄m̄B̄t̄U B̄ib̄t̄q w̄ew̄it̄q w̄j t̄L̄w̄Q|

1. `w̄j qv Mí Uvq B̄w̄Z̄n̄vm thŪK̄z̄Av̄t̄Q t̄m̄ Av̄t̄Q M̄t̄í i ēw̄n: c̄t̄½Y- A\_v̄r M̄v̄t̄Q P̄w̄it̄q  
 w̄t̄q ḡB w̄b̄t̄q̄t̄Q Q̄w̄U| Av̄m̄j Mí Uv t̄l̄v̄j Av̄bv̄B Mí |
2. gv÷vi ḡkvq M̄t̄í i f̄w̄ḡK̄v AskUv Ges ḡw̄bn̄vi Mí w̄U (K̄D̄w̄en̄v̄t̄i ḡn̄v̄eȲxi  
 Z̄v̄M̄t̄`) ḡt̄L ḡt̄L i w̄PZ|
3. ȳm̄aZ c̄v̄l̄v̄t̄Yi K̄íbv̄l K̄í̄t̄j v̄K t\_̄t̄K Av̄g`v̄bx|
4. t̄ev̄óg Āt̄b̄KL̄w̄b̄B m̄Z`| GB t̄ev̄ógx `q̄s Av̄ḡvi K̄v̄t̄Q Ḡt̄m̄ Mí KiZ| t̄kl  
 AskUvq Aí w̄KQzē`j K̄tīw̄Q|
5. K̄v̄en̄j I q̄jv̄ v̄e v̄ē N̄Ūbv̄ bq| w̄ḡw̄b̄ Av̄ḡvi eo t̄ḡt̄q̄i Av̄t̄k̄w̄PZ|
6. w̄ēt`w̄K̄ D̄c̄v`v̄b w̄b̄t̄q Av̄w̄ḡ KL̄t̄bv̄ w̄KQz̄ij w̄L̄w̄b|<sup>1</sup>

Kb`v ḡx̄iv t`ext̄K t̄j Lv Kwei w̄Pw̄v:

Ūc̄w̄\_ext̄Z t̄ḡt̄q Ges c̄j̄āt̄li ḡt̄a` th K̄t̄āš̄P̄ w̄ef̄v̄M̄ n̄t̄q̄t̄Q Z̄vi ḡt̄a` GUv̄l GKUv-  
 c̄j̄āt̄liv t`t̄ki K̄v̄R K̄īt̄e, t̄ḡt̄q̄iv N̄t̄ii K̄v̄R K̄īt̄e, c̄j̄āt̄liv eB w̄j L̄t̄e, t̄ḡt̄q̄iv w̄Pw̄v  
 w̄j L̄t̄e| w̄Pw̄v t̄j L̄vi `bc̄y` t̄ḡt̄q̄t`i `f̄v̄ēw̄m̄x -c̄j̄āt̄t`i I Uv t̄b̄B et̄j̄B nq| Av̄ḡiv  
 K̄v̄t̄Ri w̄Pw̄v w̄j L̄t̄Z c̄w̄i -AK̄v̄t̄Ri w̄Pw̄v̄t̄Z Av̄ḡv̄t`i K̄j̄ḡ m̄ti bv GB Z w̄Pw̄v t̄j Lv m̄āt̄Ū  
 t̄Z̄v̄t̄K `eĀw̄b̄K ZĒ; e`v̄L`v̄ K̄tī w̄j L̄j̄ḡ; f̄v̄t̄M` GUv `eĀw̄b̄K, Z̄v̄B GZL̄w̄b̄ t̄j Levi  
 m̄w̄ēav̄ nj |<sup>2</sup>

Agi M`w̄k̄íx̄ īex`bv\_t̄K R̄v̄b̄t̄Z I ēš̄t̄Z n̄t̄j Zui Am̄v̄aviY ŪM̄í, "QŪ K̄v̄e`M̄S;  
 Dcb`vm I Zui āgYK̄v̄w̄w̄b̄, t̄jv̄ f̄v̄t̄jv̄ K̄tī cov `iK̄vi| īayM̄t̄`i aib bq,  
 īex`bv\_t̄i w̄ew̄P̄T̄ P̄w̄īT̄ j̄ȳYm̄ḡr̄ Zui āgY K̄v̄w̄w̄b̄i m̄ēP̄B Q̄w̄it̄q̄ w̄Q̄w̄it̄q̄ īt̄q̄t̄Q| gv̄T̄  
 m̄t̄Zi eQi eq̄t̄m̄ BD̄t̄iv̄c āḡt̄Yi Āw̄f̄ĀZ̄v̄ w̄b̄t̄q̄ 1881 m̄v̄t̄j c̄K̄w̄k̄Z n̄t̄jv̄ īex`bv\_t̄i  
 Ūq̄t̄j̄v̄c c̄ēv̄m̄xi c̄T̄Ū| ējv̄ P̄t̄j GL̄vb t\_̄t̄KB Zui āgY m̄w̄w̄t̄Z`i īīāl̄ Gil `ḡQi ci

<sup>1</sup> w̄Pw̄v̄c̄T̄, 9g L̄D̄, c., 94-95

<sup>2</sup> w̄Pw̄v̄c̄T̄-4, c., 34

cĀkĀkZ nq Zui ōtešVvKžvYxi nUŪ| Rxeṭb Avb>-te`bvi űePĀ GB tLjvi  
PjgubZvṭK ü`tq Abgveṭbi tFZṭiB meP̄ t`Lv hvq Zui āgY Kvniub,tjvṭZ|  
Ōi vĀkqvi űPűŌṭZ ZvṭK t`Lv hvq űkyveZx űntmṭe| Ōcviṭm`Ō bvgK āgYKvniubṭZ  
t`LṭZ cvB GKRB BwZnvm cvVKiṭc|

ieṭ`bv\_ t`k | Kvj űPšṭq meP̄viZxq| gvby űntmṭe meP̄ kxq cĀYZv j`y Kiv hvq  
Zui āgYKvniub,tjvṭZ| ieṭ`bv\_ i t`Lv cvlexi Lg Aí RvqMvi ṭvb nṭqṭQ Zui  
āgY mṭntZ`| AvāKvsk RvqMv űbṭq AvṭQb ieṭ`bv\_| Zui āgY mṭntZ` cĀvbZ  
Avcb űPšṭ/-fvebv dṭŪ DṭVṭQ űbR`^mṭṭqZvq| Zui t`Lv RvqMṭŪi eYṭv tbnvZ  
mvgvb`B GṭmṭQ|

t`tki Rvq`mī Z`vi vĀK KiṭZ KiṭZ űZvb hLb nṭcṭq DVṭZb nvl qv e`tj i cĀqvRṭb  
KLṭbv-ev űeṭ`tk űeṭfbaaiṭbi AvgšṭY mṭov ű`tq Nṭji AvmṭZb| āgY AvfĀZv ZvṭK  
űkűLṭqṭQ Gi gṭa`B űPĒgṭy<sup>2</sup> i GK űekvj Dcv`vb űbṭnZ|

Ōevsj v Qovi mṭntZ`ZvĒK űfűĒfűgűŪṭZI cĀg cĀli djK ṭvcb KṭiṭQṭj b ieṭ`bv\_  
VvKž| i vṭg>ṭy i űṭte`x<sup>1</sup> Qov Zui mgKvj xbt`i gṭa` Avi KvDṭKB G KvṭR AMṭi  
nṭZ t`Lv hvq űb|Ų<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> i vṭg>ṭy i űṭte`x: evsj v fvlvi GKRB ṭbvgab` űeĀvb tj LK| Rbṭ: 20 AvM÷, 1864| gZž: 6 Rly,  
1919|

<sup>2</sup> evsj v GKvṭWgűi űbte`b: ieṭ`bv\_ VvKž, (cĀkĀkKvj -2011, XvKv, evsj v GKvṭWgű), c., 523

## beg Aa`vq

### Z`bvgj-K ch`j vPbv

`B gnr`tki `B L`vZgvb tj LK bvrRe gvdR I iex`bv\_ VvKz | GKRtbi gj-  
cwi Pq uZvb Kue I MxvZKvi | Avi Kve`Mš`i Rb`B uZvb mvrntZ` tbrtej cy`vi cvb |  
Ab`w`tk Avt`KRb Z\_v bvrRe gvdRi Avmj cwi Pq uZvb GKRb Jcb`vmK | Avi  
Dcb`vm mvrntZ` Amvqvb` Ae`v`tbi Rb`B uZvb tbrtej cy`vi cvb |

A\_P Gt`i Df`qib tQvUMt`i vekij Ae`vb itqtQ | GLv`b Avgv`i gj- Avtj vPbvi  
nelq Zv`i tQvUMt`i Z`bvgj-K ch`j vPbv | m`z`ivs G nelqvi Mf`xti c`etki  
Avt`MB Avgv`i uKQznel`q `uó aviyv \_vkv `iKvi | iex`bv`i Rb` 1861 mvtj |  
Avi bvrRe gvdRi Rb` 1911 mvtj | Df`qB thgb wfbret`tki tZgvb wfbret`Mi |  
ZvB Zv`i wj Lubi nelq wfbret`qvuvB `rfv`ek | KviY c`Z`K tj LKB cwi cvk`R  
Aven I h`Mi Øviv tKv`bv-bv-tKv`bvfvte c`f`v`ez nb | Dbwesk kZv`x`Z vek`cwi w`vZ  
th w`tk uQj wesk kZv`x`Z Gtm Ab`j`c \_vKte GgbuU fvevI mgvPxb bq |

GKRb tj LK tKv`bvfvteB mgKvj xb cwi w`vZ`K Gwotq th`Z cvt`i b bv | Zvi wj Lub`Z  
w`o`qB d`Z DVte mgKvj xb h`M ev`éZvi wbg` mZ` | m`z`ivs iex`bv\_ VvKz I bvrRe  
gvdRi M`t`i nelqe` KLt`bv GK nte bv | Aek`B wfbz`v cwi j`v`Z nte | Zely  
Zv`i t`K `^`^Ae`v`tb w`g`vb t`L Zv`i Ae`vb-KiYxq BZ`w`i gva`tg Zv`i  
Ktg` Z`bvgj-K ch`j vPbv Kiv nte |

uKš` GK\_v mZ`, tj LK th Kv`j i ev h`Mi tnvK bv tKb Zv`K Kwij K mxgv AvZ`µg  
Kt`i t`k I gvbt`i Kj`v`Y uKQzmv`v`RK `vqex`Zv \_v`K | t`mB `w`qZ`v`v`tai `vb  
t`tk Avgiv GKRb tj LKt`K gj`v`qb Kwi | Zui wj Lub mgvR I ev`éZvi Avtj v`K  
KZUv mveR`bxb Ges gvbt`i gv`S Avtj vob m`ó Ki`Z m`yg ntqtQ | Avi gvby I  
mgvR Gi Øviv KZUv DcKZ .ntqtQ |

### Kv`j v`v`v`j i`i`v`Lubv

#### (L`v`j`iv Avj -uKZ; Avj -Avml qv` -خمارة القط الأسود- ) I `c`i`Y

c`Q`tgB Avgiv h`w` bvrRe gvdRi L`v`j`iv uKZ; Avj -Avml qv` M`i`w`i K\_v awi Zvntj  
t`L`Z cvB, G M`t`i bvrRe gvdR `^`^v`Pvix kvmt`Ki wnsmv`w`et`Øt`li fqvj AvPiY Z`j  
at`i`Qb | dtj uZvb ZrKvj xb w`g`kixq kv`mK Rv`gvj Av`j`y bvt`mi c`kvmt`bi tivlvbtj  
c`tob | KviY uZvb t`k cwi Pvj bvq bvt`mt`i bvrnt`K tKv`bvfvteB mg\_Ø Ki`Z  
cvt`i bvb | uZvb Avt`bvqvi mv`vZ`Øt`K mg\_Ø w`t`qv`Øt`j b | dtj uZvb GKRb mvrnt`Z`K

nṭqI t`k I RbMṭYi K\_v gv\_vq tiṭL ivRbMṭZi mṭ\_ mṭú<sup>3</sup> nṭq hvb| Avi t`ṭki msKUGg gṭZ<sup>©</sup>we`gvb cwiwṭZi weiaṭx wj Lwb aviY Kṭi GKRB t`ṭcṭgK` wṭqZṭvb tṭLṭKi fṭgKvq AeZṭ nb|

Aciw`ṭK Avgiv hw` iex`bvṭ\_i Mṭ\_ tṭjv weṭkṭY Kwi Zvntṭ t`LṭZ cvB, iex`bv\_wj LwbṭZ ivRbMṭZ cṭKṭki cṭy wQṭj b bv| wZwb hLb tṭLK L`wṭZi kṭI<sup>©</sup>ZLb fviZxq Dcgnṭ`ṭk weṭUk kvmb Kṭṭqg wQj | wZwb PṭBṭj wj Lwb aviY Kṭi weṭUkṭ`i weiaṭx G t`ṭki RbMYṭK `ṭaxbZv mṭPZb Kṭi ZṭṭZ cvṭZb| wKŠ` wZwb Zv Kṭibub| Zṭe t`kxq mṭṭú<sup>ṭ</sup> wṭqKZvi weiaṭx wZwb Kṭj g aṭiwQṭj b| Ab`w`ṭK MvÜMṭRi mṭ\_I iex`bvṭ\_i fṭṭjv mṭṭúK<sup>ṭ</sup>Qj | MvÜMṭR ivRbMṭZi bvbv weṭṭq iex`bvṭ\_i KṭṭQ cṭṭgk<sup>ṭ</sup>PṭBṭZb| Aek` 1913 mṭṭj mṭṭṭZ` tṭṭṭej cṭ`vi cṭṭBi cṭi Avgiv GK wfbce iex`bvṭ\_ṭK t`LṭZ cvB| 1915 mṭṭj wZwb weṭUkṭ`i Rṭṭj I qvbI qṭj veṭṭMi bviKxq nZ`vKṭṭṭi cṭZṭṭ` Zṭṭ`i t`qv bṭBU Dcvṭa Z`M Kṭi b|

Zui `cṭiY Mṭṭi GK mṭṭṭZ`K-L`wṭZṭj vṭx D`PṭKv•Lx hṭṭKi Qwe GṭK wZwb Zui AvZṭṭPZbviB cwiPq w`ṭṭṭQb| G Mṭṭi t`Lv hvq hṭṭK Zvi `ṭṭK fṭṭjveṭṭj I `ṭṭi wṭR`^mṭṭṭZ`K mṭṭṭUṭK iṭx KiṭZ Pṭq| Zvi gṭZ mṭṭṭZ` bviṭṭṭf bq| `Kṭkvi I cṭṭg thṭṭṭb `ṭs iex`bv\_ bviṭ mṭṭúṭK<sup>ṭ</sup>GB iKg aviYv KiṭZb eṭj B Rvbv hvq| Zṭe t`Lv hvq `cṭiY Mṭṭi D<sup>3</sup> hṭṭKṭUṭi `ṭṭi cṭṭZfṭṭK tṭkI chṭṭṭm `ṭKvi KiṭZ eva` nq|

1936 mṭṭj hLb iex`bvṭ\_i On Russia Z\_v iṭṭkqvi wPw cṭṭṭKZ nṭṭjv weṭUk miKvi mṭ\_ mṭ\_ Zv eṭṭRqvṭ Kṭi t`q| iṭṭkqv ṭṭṭYi ci Zvi ev`ṭe AwfÁZv nṭṭṭQj th, fviZxq Dcgnṭ`ṭki `wṭi`<sup>ṭ</sup>Zvi GKgvṭ KviY RbmsL`v eṭṭx bq, eis kvṭKṭkṭṭxi tṭkIYgṭ-K `elg` bṭṭZi KviṭYI eṭU| iex`bv\_ hLb iṭṭkqvi wPwṭZ cṭṭZ.mZ`ṭK Zṭṭ Avṭṭj b ZLb wZwb eo aiṭYi av`v tLṭj b| GB wṭṭlavÁv Zui Rxeṭ kvṭZ Avi iṭṭZ nqṭb|

t`Lv hvq iex`bvṭ\_i AṭṭK tQvUMṭṭi tṭkI jvBb evsjv fṭṭvq cṭṭ`cṭṭZg| thgb ŌRṭṭeZ I gZŌMṭi wṭi tṭkI jvBb ŌKv`wṭṭx gwiqv cṭṭvY Kwi j tm gṭi bṭB| ŌwKŠ`bṭṭRe gṭṭṭṭRi Mṭṭi i tṭṭṭ tṭkI jvBb\_ tṭjv Gfṭṭe cṭṭ`Zṭ` nṭq DVṭZ cvṭi wṭ| t`kxq bvbv mgm`v Avi msKU iex`bvṭ\_i gṭbi Mfṭṭi th wṭṭj wj Zṭṭ wQj Zvi mṭ\_ thvM nṭṭṭQj e`w<sup>3</sup>K I cwiṭevṭi K me msKU GB wṭṭq `Zui nṭṭṭQ iex`bvṭ\_i Mṭṭi i cṭ|



**جنة الأطفال -AvZdvj -M(RibwZ Avj -iki i tZvZvKvnbx I**

Abiw tK bwiRe gvndtRi Mtí i cbl wbgZ ntqtQ mgKvj xb mgvRe"e"vi Íau-vePziZ,  
kvmfKi ^-fvPvi bwiZ, Avcb `vkK AbvZ, tcö-cöwZ | wZwb Zui Mtí Pj gvb  
ivR%öwZK Ae"vi ýwZKi w K Ztj atitQb | ZvB ev"é wPÍ Ztj atiz wMtq KLtbv  
AvkÖ wbtqtQb cZxKx e<sup>3</sup>te"i | Avevi KLtbv mgvtj vPbv KtitQb "úofvte |

tKvgj gwZ wkyv\_ i wbtq iex`bv\_i wkyv `kfbí GKwU LdipÍ Dfv GtmtQ Zui  
ÔtZvZvKvnbxÔ Mtí | GLvfb wZwb wkyv w elqK Kzs"vi tK Ztj atitQb | tZvZvKvnbx  
Mtí i tZvZv Avi tKD bq, Avgvt`i tKvgj gwZ wki iv | we"v wkyvi bvtg hvt`i tK  
Avgiv gvbumK AkwšfZ iwL | GB meR c\_w ex Avi bxj AvKvk Zvi Avmj tLj vNi |  
we"v ARfbí tyÍ | GLvfbB Zvt`i Avmj mly | we"v wkyvi bvtg Zvt`i tK Avgiv Pvi  
t`qvftj i gvtS ex`x Kti iwL | weKwKZ ntZ t`B bv Zvi cÖZfvK | Ávb ARÖ m"úftK<sup>©</sup>  
iex`bv\_ etjb, ÔAvgvt`i t`tk Am\_R `wv`" `tLi w elq, j<sup>3</sup>/vi w elq Avgvt`i  
wkyvi Awk wÁrKiZj | GB Awk wÁrKiZj gftj AvtQ Avgvt`i wkyv e"e"vq  
A"fvweKZv, t`tki gwUí mt½ GB e"e"vi we"Q`Ô | wZwb Avil etjb, ÔAvgvt`i  
fvlv, Avgvt`i Am\_R Ae"v, Avgvt`i Awberh<sup>©</sup>Awkyvi mt½ ivókvmbeiwai wecj  
e"eavbekZt ct` ct` th`tL I Ace"q NtU Zvi cwí gvY cÖZ | Zeyej tZ cwí GUv  
evn" | wKš wkyv e"vcti t`tki cÖYMZ Avcb wRwbm bv nl qv Zvi tPtq ggwšK |<sup>2</sup>  
wkyv wRwbmUv `Re, Gi cÖqMUv hšthvM nq bv | ZvBtZv iex`bv\_ etjtQb, Ôwkyv  
m"úftK<sup>©</sup>metPtq `xKZ. I metPtq DtcwYz K\_vUv GB th, wkyv wRwbmUv `Re, I Uv  
hwšK bq, G m"ftÜ KvheYvj xi cñ½ cti AvmtZ cti, wKš cÖYwqv cñ½  
meMÖ<sup>3</sup>

wkyv m"úftK<sup>©</sup>iex`bv\_i metPtq tRvvtjv e<sup>3</sup>e" ntjv, Ôwkyvq gvZfv. I vB gvZ`y,  
RMtZ GB meRb`xKZ. wbiwZkq mnR K\_vUv eúKvj cte<sup>©</sup>GKw b etj wQj vg, AvRI  
Zvi clyvewÉ Kitev | tmw b hv BsvRv wkyvq gšgy KYRzti Akö" ntqiwj , AvRI  
hw` Zv j ý"áo nq, Zte Avkv Kwí, clyvewÉ Kievi gvby evti evti cvl qv hvte |<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Awbmöyivgvb, iex`bv\_, (cKvkKvj - evBtk kÖeY, XvKv, eisj v GKvtWgx), c., 69-70  
<sup>2</sup> cÖ, B, c., 71  
<sup>3</sup> cÖ, B, c., 72  
<sup>4</sup> cÖ, B, c., 76-77

*i ex`bv\_ GLv#b wkyvi cKZ. ^fc D#b#Pb Ki#Z eZx ntqtQb| wkyvi Avmj D#i`k`  
 g#bvrwMwZK cwieZ#| Avi Gi PPPnt#Z cvi giZf.vlvq| Pxb AvbPP# gva`g wntmte  
 gvZf.vlv#K M#Y K#i#Q etj Z#`i t`tk weAvb I wkt#i c#Z DbwZ mwvZ ntqtQ|  
 i ex`bv\_ e#Kvj c#eB Gw#K Avgt`i `w AvKI# K#i#Qb| hLb G#`tk PZ#`K  
 B#iR kvmtbi c#ve wQj | wkyv#y#i G#`tki gvbt#i gb-gvbwMkZvq cwieZ#  
 Avb#Z wZwb mwvwx c`#yc wbtqwQ#j b| AKc#U wbt#i gZvgZ e`<sup>3</sup> K#i#Q#j b|*

*Ab`w#K RvbwZ Avj -AvZdvj bwRe gvnd#Ri wki`w#lqK GKwU #QvUM#i ntj I wfbce  
 `#`i w#lq wbtq M#i wU GwM#q P#j #Q| ag#q w#k#m#K tK`<sup>a</sup>K#i M#i i Kwvwb AvewZ#  
 ntqtQ| G M#i t`#K bwRe gvnd#Ri ag#q w#k#m#i Avfvm cvl qv hvq| tQv# tg#q  
 bv`xqv ag#wbtq c#k#K#i#j tm tKv#bv D#i t`q bv, tKej etj me agB fv#j v| GgbwK  
 bv`xqv hLb L#ag#c#j#b AvM#x nq tm Zv#Zi evav t`q bv| GLv#b thgb Zwi  
 Amv`u` wqK g#bi cwipq cvl qv hvq tZgwb L# ag#K tk#Z#i Avm#b emv#bvi GKUv  
 c#ym j`y Kiv hvq| GKRb g#j gvb wntmte GLv#b wZwb wR`^mwlvqZv mwv#tqtQb|  
 hv i ex`bv#\_i wFZ#i KL#bv j`y Kiv hvq bv| wZwb GKRb e#pY m#š#b wQ#j b| Avi  
 tm g#ZB wZwb Zwi wR`^ag#Rg#c#j b Ki#Zb| tkl ch#š#wZwb Zwi ag#w#k#m#i Dci  
 AvePj wQ#j b| Zvi ag#eva Avm#j wQj weeZ#k#j | Zwi e`w<sup>3</sup>#Z#i weKv#ki mv#\_  
 mv#\_ Zvi I weKv# mwvZ ntqtQ tKv#bv GK RvqMvq t`tg `#Kwb|*

**Z`wM I GB kZv#xi t#j (nhv Avj -Kib-هذا القرن)**

*Z`wM tQvUM#i wU i bwvqKv K#z#j| tm weaev| G M#i bvqK tngš#w#eav K#z#gi gb  
 niY K#i | eB nv#Z Qv#`i wP#j #KvVvq etm K#z#gi w#`K tP#q `#K| GKmgq  
 Zvi t#jg cto hvq| tngš#w#i g#b thgb tKv#bv cvc wQj bv tZgwb Zvi D#i`k`I  
 fv#j v wQj | G M#i i ex`bv\_ wv`ymgv#R weaev#`i wbtq th K#z#`vi `Zwi  
 ntqwwQj K#z#j-tngš#w#i Agi t#jgi ga` w`#q Zv fv#vi tP#v K#i#Qb| G M#i  
 tjLK Kv#j Kv#j wv`ymgv#R m# G Ab`vq I K#z#`v#i iei#x i#L  
 `w#tqtQb| tngš#w#i Pw#i#i gva`tg Zv Ki#Z m#y# ntqtQb| Zvi Rb` tngš#w#i  
 A#bK Z`wM `Kvi Ki#Z ntqtQ| Qv#Z ntqtQ Avcb Ni-m#mvi | tngš#w#i hLb  
 Zvi weaev `#K Kvq`#tR#b| wecj k#<sup>3</sup>kvj x mgvR I wZvi AeAvi iei#x Ni  
 nt#Z tei K#i w`#Z i wR ntj v bv, tkl ch#š#w#i tngš#w#i m`#K cwievi nt#Z wZv  
 KZ#`cw#i Z`v<sup>3</sup> nt#Z ntj v|*

G Mí i ex`bv`i mgvRiPšti nelqiu j`y` Kiv hvq| i ayZvB bq, mgvRRxetb  
G Mí u e`vcK cĕve ne`li Kiž mýg ntqQ| hv i ex`múoi cĕve ne`li Kiv x  
Mí ,tjvi gta` Ab`Zg| weaev weevn ubtq i ex`bv` in`ymgvRi gta` th  
Avtjvob múo Kiž tPtqiuQtb Zv mdj ntqQ| w`tb w`tb weaev weevn ubtq  
in`ymgvRi gvby,tjvi `úo fúzi l cwi eZĖ ntqQ| mvgvRK mgm`v,tjvi  
`kwi K eYĖvq i ex`bv` GK `y` tQiu Mí Kvi | ZvB ZvK evsjvminž`i mv`  
tQvUMí i RbK ejv nq| wekI Kti mgvR KZĖ brix ubcxotbi nelqiu Zvi  
Mí AZ`š PgrKvi fĕte Ztj AvbtZ mýg ntqQb| thgbu bviRe gvndžRi  
Mí t`Lv hvq bv|

nivh Avj -Kib GiiU GKiu tĕgi Mí | hv bviRe gvndžRi AvZ AvaybK  
tQvUMí ,tjvi gta` GKiu| i ex`bv`i Mí th mvgvRK w`Kiu itqQ GLvĕb  
Abjfc bv ntj l AvaybKZg mgqi GKiu tQvUMí i mvgvRK PgrKvi me w`K  
Dĕv GĕmĕQ| `kwi K eYĖvq GiiU GKiu DĖzvĕbi Mí | G Mí uĕZ GKB mvĕ`  
cwi ewi K, mvgvRK l i vR%wZK Aveĕni GKiu Rxeš`PĖ Ztj aiv ntqQ| DĖz  
mgvRi gvby,tjvi j vBd ÷vBj | GLvĕb t`Lv hvq Mfxi ivZ Aeiĕa Kve Avi  
Avĕvq gĕR `vĕK GK tkĕyi gvby| Gici evmvq uĕti Avĕm tbkvq ež ntq|

GB kZvāxi PgrKvi GKiu tĕgi `k` AvĕQ G Mí uĕZ| j jyj tĕg gĕ GK  
Ziaĕ hĕK| gšĕ cvkv l Zvi `x evBti `vKvq cĕix`i tPvL dĕK w`tq Ziaĕ  
tĕgK cvkvi evmĕZ WĕK ĕto| Avi Pĕcmĕti cvkv Kb`v j jyj tĕg nwi tq hvq|  
GB kZvāxi GKiu tĕgi Kvinub weaZ ntqQ GLvĕb|

cij vĕZ uĕtq aiv cotj l hĕtKi cwi Pqiu cvkv mevi ubKU t`ĕK Avovj Kiž  
Pvq| wKš`Mvnoi WĕBfvĕi KivQ nelqiu Ab`i Kg j vĕM| cvkv cĕvY Kiž Pvq  
tm gvZij | gvĕtei weia` AvPiY Kiž uĕtq GK chĕq PvKwi nivq WĕBfvi |  
GLvĕb bviRe gvndžR weĕkvj x cwi evi ,tj vĕZ j vKtq `vKv Avvĕi i tMigU dĕn  
Kti w`tqQb| wZub G Mí i ga` w`tq cĕvY KtiĕQb gvĕe AĕbK eo Ab`vq  
Kij l tmUv AĕbK tĕtĕ Zvĕ`i KivQ Ab`vq etj cĕZxqgvb nq bv| hLb tKvĕb  
mvaviY e`w<sup>3</sup> G mZ`ĕK cĕKv Kiž hvq ZLb ZvĕK AĕbK eo tLmvi Z w`ĕZ  
nq| Dci gntj i gvby,tjvi Ėau,tjv bviRe gvndžRi Mí mvinmKZvi mvĕ`  
ewYĖ ntqQ| hv i ex`bv`i Mí Lĕy KgB ntqQ|

WfBfiri PivKii nriVZ nti I GK mgq hqKiuK jjiy`vqx etj tgb ubtZ  
nq| mvgvb` thvM`Zv ubtqI gšx křii KviTY fvtjv GKUv Ae`vbl tclQ hvte  
tm| KviY Zvi kviiuo RvqvZvK Dcti ZjtZ ex ciii Ki |

bvRe gvndR Zui G Mti ivR%bWZK`vcUtk e`envi Kti GKRB ubae`  
e`w<sup>3</sup>I Kxfvte AvZ mntR Dcti DVvi vmiu<sub>3</sub>tjv gvnotq ubtRi Rb` GKUv  
mšybRbK c`tk cvKv<sup>3</sup> Kti Zvi I GKiu AvtjL` Zjt atitQb| iek`bv<sub>i</sub>  
Mti GB me velq<sub>3</sub>tjv Lq KgB GtbQb| vZvb ivR%bWZK velq<sub>3</sub>tjv me mgq  
Gnotq Pjt Qb|

bvRe vbiQvq`Kvi KtiQb Zui vj Lub tKv<sub>3</sub>bv-bv-tKv<sub>3</sub>bvfvte ivRbWZi mv<sub>3</sub>  
mšú<sup>3</sup>| GKK\_vq Zui Ggb tKv<sub>3</sub>bv tj Lv cvl qv hvte bv hv ivRbWZi mv<sub>3</sub>  
bq|

### **Avfhj (Avj-gšvng-المتهم) I mfv**

eüglx cZfvi AvKvix bvRe gvndR| ZvB Zui Mí<sub>3</sub>tjvtZ cvVK Pmiv`v Ablyvqx  
ubZ`bZb velq ubtq nviRi ntqQb| eütkv`KZvi msngkš NtU<sup>3</sup> Zui Mti | tKej  
ivR%bWZK velqB bq, Acivci velq<sub>3</sub>tjv t`Lv tgtj Zui tj Lvq| Avj-gšvng  
bvRe gvndRi Ggb GKiu Mí thLv<sub>3</sub>b cšvmbK Avgjvt`i`vqZp<sub>3</sub>Avi  
tKej gvI bvgme`cZev`x mvari Y gvbtj i T<sub>3</sub>U-veP<sub>3</sub>Zi vewfbv<sub>3</sub>K Zjt aiv ntqQ|

G Mti t`Lv<sub>3</sub>bv ntqQ Kxfvte Avj x gšvni gtZv GKRB ubt`I I DcKvi civqY gvby  
Avqv` Avj-Rvidix bvgK GK e`w<sup>3</sup>i vgt` L<sub>3</sub>bi`vq tgb ubtZ nq| Avqv` Avj-  
RvidixK GKiu Uik vcl v<sub>3</sub>tj ZvK ev<sub>3</sub>vtZB GvMtq Avtm Avj x gšvni| Avi cvtki  
meR tytZ KgPZ KIK`j cKZ.AcivaxK t`L<sub>3</sub>Z bv tctqI NUbv<sub>3</sub>tj`vKv Avj x  
gšvntKB`vqx Kti G`N<sub>3</sub>bvi Rb`| Zvt`i mvy`B ZvtK Avmvgxi KvVMovq`v<sub>3</sub>Kivq|

bvRe gvndR Zui G Mti mgvRe`e`vi bvbv AmsM<sub>3</sub>Zi vP<sub>3</sub> AZ`š<sub>3</sub> mvejxj fvlvq  
cvtki Rb` vkyYxq ifc Dc`vcb Kitz myg ntqQb| vek`mgvRe`e`vq hv AvRI  
ve`gvb| iek`bv<sub>i</sub> Mti mPivPi Ggb velq<sub>3</sub>tjv Lq GKUv t`Lv hvq bv|

G Mti t`Lv hvq NUbv<sub>3</sub>tj cvjtki AvMvgb NUtj I Avmj AcivaxK kbv<sup>3</sup> Kivi  
tKv<sub>3</sub>bv B`QvB cvjtki gta`j<sub>3</sub> Kiv hvq bv| eiA cvj k Avj x gšvni K<sub>3</sub>v<sub>3</sub>K tKv<sub>3</sub>bv  
<sub>3</sub>ia<sub>3</sub>z<sub>3</sub>bv v<sub>3</sub>tq ZvtKB Acivax etj atitbq| G Mti cvjtki Ae`vb GUVB cšvY Kti  
Avqv` Avj-RvidixK ubtq cvjkl GKUv bMb` tLjvq gE| Avi Avj x gšvni gtZv

GKRb ubiciva gvbytk t`vix mre`Kti eo aitYi Am\_R divq`v nwmj KivB hvi Dtik`| hv GKUW t`tki kimb`e`v bó nevi BwZ t`q|

bwRe gvndzri Mti i GKUW PgrKvi w`K ntjv wZub Zvi wj Lubi gva`tg t`tki ckvmbK e`e`vi `ZvK Zzj atitQb| k<sup>3</sup> wj Lub w`tq AvNvZ KtitQb ckvmbK| dtj Zviv btoPto emtZ eva` ntqtQ| iex`bv\_ VvKz memgq Zui Mí ,tj vtZ ckvmbK e`e`vi mgvtj vPbv Kiv t`tK weiz t`tKtQb| Avi G KvitYB ivóqfite wZub tKvbtv cKvi evavi m`xnb nbub| thgbu bwRe gvndzri tyt`T ntqtQ|

GKUW Amnvq tqtqi RxebKvmb ubtq ubigZ ntqtQ iex`bv\_i mfv Mí u| gv ZvK Zvi MtfP Kj ¼ gtb Kti thtnZztm tever| Zely mfyvi e`ev evYKÉ Ab` tqtq` i Zz`bvq ZvK GKUz`nk fvj verfm|

mfv w`tb w`tb eo ntq hvq| Avi ubtRtK Abfye KitZ tktL| tj vtK ub`v KitZ`i iæ KtitQ| tqtq eo ntqtQ Zvi wetq w`tZ nte| Zv`i GK Nti Kti t`te Ggb GKUv K\_vl tkvbr hv`Q| e`ev wPwSZ ntq ctoQb tqtqi Rb`|

mfyvi wPitPbv Mdtgi gwU Avi eUz`i tQto wetqi Rb` ubtq hvL qv ntjv Kj KvZvq| eictyi gtbvthw AvKPtYi Rb` h`vmva` ZvK mivRvbtv ntjv| mfyvi tPvL w`tq Aké SiQ| ei`qs Ktb t`Ltz Gtj b| AtbKyY wixyY Kti ej tj b,0g` btn, emj Kvi μ`b t`tL eStj b Bvvi ü`q AvQ, Ges wmvve Kti t`Ltz b, th-ü`q AvR evcgvqtqi wet`Q`m`vebvq e`w\_Z ntq DVtQ tmB ü`q AvR evt` Kij AvgviB e`envti j vMtZ cvti | 0

wetq ntq tmj tever tqtquj, th Bt`Q Kti KvDtK VKvtZ Pqvub| Zvi tPvL tm K\_vB etj tQ wKŠ` Zviv tevSvb| tkl chS`Gi gvij ZvK MbtZ ntjv| e`ev-gv tqtq wetq w`tq t`tk Ptj Gtj b| mBvLvtbtKi gta` mevB eSj tqtqu tever| ZvB Avi wej`<sup>a</sup> bq, `vqx Geri tPvL Avi Kvb Oviv fvjv Kti hvPvB-evQvB Kti fvlwewkó tqtq wetq Kti Avbtj b| mfvtk fvmtZ ntjv `tLi mMtj |

iex`bv\_ GaitYi cwiewiK I mvgvRK Mí mwtZ bwRe gvndzri tPtq GK avc GwMtq| Zui Mí ,tj vtZ cwiewiK w`lq ,tjv AZ`šl my`i fite dZU DvtQ| Avj - gfvnv Mí u| mvt\_ G Mí u| GKUW RvqMvq Amvavi Y wj j`y Kiv hvq-G Mí u| tZ mfv Avmtj wbt`P | tm KvDtK cZvi Yv Kti ub| Zvi e`ev evbKÉ I Zvi mgvR Avmj t`vix| hvi Kg@j tfvM KitZ ntqtQ GB c`lexi Ab` `kuW tqtqi t`tK e`wZμg `vbx mfv tqtquK| Avi Avj gfvnv Mí u| tZ Avj x ggv `vqx bq| cKZ.t`vix

UñKWBFvi | th G'vKum#Wu NuUta cwy tq hvq| Avi tdtun hvq Avj x ggv| Ab'w#K  
Avqr` Avj -Rvdx#K wbg# GK gZzi `r` MhY Ki#Z nq|

### **nvhj I cjk (nvhj Iqvj AvmKix-العسكري وهنزل) I GKiw**

bwRe gvnd#Ri wfb#`i Mí ,tjvi gta` GKw nvhj Iqvj AvmKix| ZrKvj xb hM  
I mgtaí tciytZ bwRe Zvi M#í i w\_g wbe#b Kti#Qb| nvhj Iqvj AvmKix Zvi  
tmB `i`kZvi cwipq| G M#í i Kwnwb GwM#q P#j#Q GKRB cjk m#R# Zvi  
KwZcq m#x#`i wbtq nvhj bvtg GKRB gv`Kvm<sup>3</sup> `wi`a`#jv#Ki m#\_ mgKwvZvi  
Ki#y wP# Aw#Z n#qtQ|

G M#í wZwb KwZcq cjk #ki bM#Pwi# dwn Kti#Qb| #`wL#q#Qb Kxfv#e Zviv nvhj  
bvqK GK gv`Kvm<sup>3</sup> nZ`wi`a`#jvKwJi m#\_ mvgwqK D#í`k` nwm#j i Rb` Zvi mg`  
Aciva yg#v Kti c#jvfb #`wL#q G nxb KvRu Kti#Q Zvi m#\_ | tml Amrvq|  
GKw#K fq, Ab'w#K Zv#`i wbg# AZ`vPvi | me wgvj tq Zvi wKQB ejvi wQj bv|  
KviY Zviv cjk Avi tm Acivax| Avi g#bl i#qtQ wKQB#v c#jvfb|

nvhj tciqKv mwbqvi m#\_I cjk Awdmvi, Ab'wb` cjkMY g#bvi#b Kti#Q  
kbwidxi mrvqZvq nvh#j i ewoi Aw#bvq| ZLb mwbqv GKw Kgv i#%i KwvR I  
me# kvj M#q w`#q Ab#v#b G#jv| n#Zi Kw#Z tmvbi P#i Avi c#q#civ bej Qrov  
Zvi kix#i Avi wKQ#`Lv h#w#Qj bv|

hLb Zv#`i D#í`k` nwm#j n#q tMj cjk Awdmvi Zvi Iqv`vi K\_v f#j tMj | m#R#  
nvh#j i D#í`k` wPrKvi w`#q ejj, Av#i cvMj, gvZvj, cjk Awdm#i i Iqv`v!  
`wvI, \_v#vq Pj |

bwRe gvnd# GB M#í mgKvg#`i Pwi# wP#Y Ki#Z m#y# n#qt#Qb GKRB mv\_#  
#j LK wnt#e| tmBm#\_ GKRB mvari Y gvZvj, cvMj #jvK#K c#j# Kivi tK#k#j UvI  
PgrKvi `kw#K`#yZvq dwtq Z#Z# m#y# n#qt#Qb| iayZvB bq, cjk w#v`i aZ#vq  
civfZ n#q nvhj Zvi tciqKv mwbq#K ch#íZv#`i g#bvi#b#i m#h#M Kti w`#qtQ|

GLv#b bwRe gvnd# PgrKvi f#e `jvPvi KwZcq cjk Awdm#i i Pwi# Z#j  
G#b#Qb| tmBm#\_ wZwb Z#j a#i#Qb cjk #ki n#Z AvUK w#c`vcb#gvZvj -cvMj  
nvh#j i g#b#v#e| hv Avi we mwn#Z` bwRe gvnd#Ri GKw be m#h#vRb| Gi Av#M  
th#bZv wbtq mwn#Z` m#o n#j I mgKwvZvi wElq# Av#mwb|







Ggubfite G Míi cĀZiU jvBb kwi K KviaKvh©Avi DĀĒRbvi ga"itq cvVtKi  
gĀbviĀtbi tLvi vK nĀq fvtj vj vMvi gĀZv me melq vbtq GĀKi ci GK GmMĀq PĀj tQ  
MĀi Kvvub| hv vektĀ tkĀ MĀ , tj vi GKUĀZ cwi YZ nĀq tQ|

GĀK GĀK cĀg tevZj I vMĀj tbq tm| Avi ūka nvi itq vĀĀ vki x iævevi MvbuU aĀi |  
vbtR vbtR nvZZvĀj t`q| ZLb evBĀi Unj`vi cvĀ tki vPrKvi | tfZĀi tK ? `PZb`  
vdĀi cvq Avng` Avbev| Fq GĀm RĀov KĀi ZvĀK|

MĀi cĀZiU jvBĀb GK aiĀbi vfbĀZv hv iex`bvĀ\_i MĀi t`Lv hvq bv| GK bZĀ Xs  
aiv cĀo G MĀi | hv ZuĀ e"vZµgxi cwi Pq|

Gici iia nq MĀi bZĀ tgvĀ| cvĀ kĀK, t`vKvb gvĀj KĀK, RbMYĀK vRivĀ KĀi  
PĀj tZ\_vĀK Avng` Avbevi bvUKxqZv| tm Fq t`Lvq, v`qvĀj vBĀqi Kvv v`itq vbtRĀK  
RĀj itq t`te| mevB fxZ nĀq cĀo Zvntj me cĀo Qvi Lvi nĀq hvte|

gvbĀx etj , Avng` Avbev ZĀg kvš"nl | hZÿY ZĀg AbgvĀZ bv`vl ZZÿY Avgiv  
`i Rv LĀje bv| Avi etj v ZĀg Kx Pvl ?

Avng` Avbev etj , Avng hv Pvb Zv Avgvi KĀtQ AvtQ|

gvbĀx etj , Avng` Avbev, Avng` vĀLZ, fĀ KĀi tZvgĀK tfZĀi tiĀL evBĀi t\_ĀK  
`i Rv eÜ KĀi v`tqĀQ|

ZĀg vĀ\_v ej Q| Avng` Avbev Avi I etj , ZĀg vK Avgvi Rb" Fq Ki Q ?

Aek"B tZĀgvi Rb" | vĀg RĀj tĀ jĀvZ tbB vĀgĀZv mĀavi Y e`| vKš`ZĀg tZv gvby|

bvĀRe gvndĀ GB MĀi vĀZ GKRB mĀ\_R MĀi Kvi vntmĀe cvVKĀK melĀqi MfxĀi vbtq  
hvĀi Rb" GKvU Avb`Nb gvĀZ©Zvi KiĀZ GĀKi ci GK ev`eagĀ vĀqj M cĀqvM  
KĀi tQb ZuĀ MĀi vĀZ| GfvĀeB GmMĀq PĀj tQ cĀjv MĀi i Kvvub| tklchš" Avng`  
Avbev kZ©t`q- Zvntj mevB ej Ā th Avng` Avbev gvĀ | GK vĀvU bxi eZv| Gi  
ciB gvĀj vĀ tQĀj t`i Avi Gj vKvi tj vKRĀbi HKZvb tkvĀv tMj , Avng` Avbev gvĀ |  
Avbevi gvĀ Pvb|

bvĀRe gvndĀRi GB MĀi vĀ cvVKĀK thgb ev`eZvi gĀLvĀgĀ `v Kivq tZgb cvVKgĀb  
nvi tLvi vKl thvĀvq| Avng` Avbev Kxfite Zvi cĀAvi cwi Pq v`itq cvĀ k, gvĀj K  
mevĀK tevKv evvbtq tm gvĀ nĀq tMj | bvĀRĀei GKvU AmĀe mĀi MĀi GvU| eūnea

wełtqi msugkŃY Mí ũUi Kwinub AveŹZ| hv bwiRe mŵi tkŃtZj cwiPq enb Kti |  
i ex`bv\_i th-ŹKvŹbv MŹi i ZŹbvq GuU GKũU Abb` mŵavi Y Mí |

i ex`bv\_i e`wZmugx euj AvŹj wPZ GKũU Mí Kvenj l qiv| Avm-mŹi vbyqMvbe  
Mí ũUi mŵ\_ wełqMZ ugj bv\_vKŹj l i ex`bv\_i G Mí ũŹZ ingZ bvŹg GKũU weŹ`kx  
Pwi ŹŹi mŪvb cvl qv hvq| i ex`bv\_i Avakvsk Mí Źj vŹZ Ź`kxq wełq l Pwi Ź DŹV  
GŹmŹQ, Gw`K Ź\_ŹK G Mí ũU GKUze`wZmug eŹU| Avm-mŹi vbyqMvbe Mí ũUi bŵbv  
AbŹ½ ugkixq mŵwZ` l mŹ`Zvi mŵ\_ mslmŹZcŹbq| thgb Mí ũUi AvMŹMvov GKRB  
ŹPŹŹi i gv`K MŹŹYi gv`KZv ũbtq Kwinubi NbNUv AveŹZŹ nŹŹŹQ| mŹivs DŹŹqi  
gvŹS weŹ`kx fŹŹei GKũU mŹ`k` j Źy Kiv hvq|

Kvenj l qjv Mí ũUi cŹg Ź\_ŹK tkŹchŹŹ GK aiŹbi Kwinubi MŹxi Zv dŹU DŹV| hv  
Avm-mŹi vbyqMvbe Gi mŵ\_ AŹbKvŹŹk ugŹj hvq| thgb Kvenj l qjv MŹi Ź`Lv hvq-  
ŹQvŹŹ tgŹq ugŹb ingŹŹi Ź`Źni cvMj | tm ingZŹK eŹŹ fŹŹjveŹŹm, Avi ingZ l  
ZvŹK Qvov\_vKŹZ cvŹi bv, ZvB hZ e`ZvB\_vKŹ bv ŹKb w`Źb GKevi ugŹbi mŵ\_  
Ź`Lv KŹi AvŹm| ingZŹK ugŹbi gv mŹ`Źni ŹPŹŹL Ź`LŹj l ugŹbi eŹv ZvŹZ ŹKQzŹb  
KŹi bv| GKũU `NŹbvq ingŹŹi AvU eQŹi i ŹRj nq| `xNŹAvU eQi ci ũŹŹi GŹm  
AveŹ l ugŹbi mŵ\_ AvŹMi gŹZv fŹv RgvŹZ PŹvq| ŹKŹ`tm fŹj hvq AvU eQi AvŹMi  
tmB ŹQvŹŹ ugŹb Avi ŹQvU ŹbB| AvR Zvi weŹŹi w`b|

GfŹŹe MŹxi AvŹeM mŵi ga`wŹŹq i ex`bv\_ Zvi Kvenj l qjv Mí ũU mŵŹbi w`ŹK  
GuMŹŹ PŹj ŹQb| Avi AmŹg `ŹZvq Ź`Źni cvMj GK eŹvŹi ggZŹK ZŹj GŹbŹQb Zvi  
MŹi |

AeŹŹŹi ŹkŹ tŹŹi ingŹŹi| tm eŹŹŹ cvŹi Ź`Źk ŹiŹL AvmŹ Zvi tmB ŹQvŹŹ LŹKũU  
Avi ŹQvU bq| GLb tm AŹbK eo nŹŹŹQ| ŹCZvi AeŹŹ gb `ŹŹogŹŹo DŹV ZvŹK  
Ź`Lvi Rb`| ŹkŹchŹŹ ingZ Ź`Źk ũŹŹi hvq| Avm-mŹi vbyqMvbe Mí ũUi tkŹ  
cwiYwŹŹŹ Ź`Lv hvq-gvZvj Avng` AvberŹK gŹŹ w`ŹZ eva`nq|

### ZŹbvi AvŹiv KŹZcŹ w`K

1. bwiRe gvndŹŹi mŵwŹZ` bŹix l cŹŹŹŹi gvŹS th`emŹ`k` iŹŹŹQ Zv mŹi fŹŹe  
ZŹj aiv nŹŹŹQ| Zvi Mí Źj vŹZ bŹix`iŹK cŹŹŹŹi ZŹbvq kwŹkuj x l ŹŹUgŹŹ KŹi  
Dc`vcb Kiv nŹŹŹQ| Avi cŹŹŹŹŹ Ź`LvŹbv nŹŹŹQ `ŹŹ l ŹŹUŹŹŹ | Ab`w`ŹK ŹZŹb  
bŹixŹK AvZŹŹbŹŹŹ ŹŹŹmŹŹe ZŹj aŹiŹQb| Avi i ex`bv\_i Mí Źj vŹZ Ź`Lv hvq  
bŹixiv weŹŹŹe eŹŹvi ŹkKvi| weŹŹŹ KŹi thŹŹŹ cŹŹvi hvZvKŹj Zviv ũŹŹŹŹŹ

ntqtQ| `yGKUv Mtr Aek" brixiv GB cYcUv t\_tK tewitq Avmvi Rb" wef`tnx ntq  
DtvfQ| tgrtUi Dci brixK`gP intmteB t`Lvfbv ntqtQ|

2. *bvRe gvndR etj tQb*,<sup>1</sup> had traveled, like Hemingway, I'm sure that my work would have been different. My work was shaped being so Egyptian.'<sup>1</sup> (hv Avng n`vngstqi gZ agY KiZvg; Avng ubwDZ th, Avngvi mvinZ`Kg<sup>e</sup>wZmg ntZv| Avngvi mvinZ`Kg<sup>Qj</sup> wgxixq atP tj Lv|) Ab`ir`tK iex`bv\_i tj Lvi welqe`GtKevti wbr`^ Ges t`kxq| Zui tj Lvq`^kxq I wef`kxq tj Lvi msugkY wbr`^vBj Aeja b Kiv nqib|

3. 1988 mvtj *bvRe gvndR Zui GK tbrfej cy`vi MhY e<sup>3</sup>Zvq etj wQtb*,<sup>2</sup> Man remembers what hurts more than what pleases.'<sup>2</sup> (gvby Avbt`i tPtq te`bvK tenk`si Y ivtL|) wKs`iex`bv\_ tj LvjtL KiZz wMtq tKvfbvKg evameciEi m`yxb nbib| dtj *bvRe gvndRi gZv ZvK tKvfbv NvZ cZNVZ mn`KiZz nqib|*

4. *bvRe mvinZ` Pwi t`wPvqY mgvRi ga`weE I wbr`weE gvby i Pwi t` tenk dZU DtvfQ| Zui mvinZ`i AnaKvsk Pwi t` KwMk`vj Avix mvinZ`i mvt\_ msMwZcY<sup>Q</sup> Dcubtekixq fvlvi AvAwj K ifc t\_tK Zui mvinZ` gY| AtbKuvB b`vPrij Ges Rretbi mvt\_ migAm`cY<sup>Q</sup> Ab`ir`tK iex`bv\_i mvinZ`i Pwi t`\_tjv tenki fVMB D`PgvM<sup>P</sup>| mvari Y gvby i K\_v Zui mvinZ` KgB Avtj wPZ ntqtQ| Avi gyyj gvby Pwi t`K t`Lvfbv ntqtQ AZ`stQvU Kti |*

5. *bvRe gvndRi mvinZ` tbrfej cy`vi cwiBi welqujK tK`^a Kti tMuv Avie wglkocZwqv e`<sup>3</sup> KtiwQj | Zviv cy`vci fite`jlv fvtM fVw ntq wMtqWj | GKcy Zui tbrfej cy`vi cwBz`wMz Rmbtq Zui Rb` MeFeva KiZv| Ab`ir`tK Avti Kuv cy`bvRe gvndRi ivR`wZK`wofwzK AnaKvsk wgxixq`i Rb` AcQvRbxq etj gtb KtiQ| iex`bv\_i tyt` GiKg tKvfbv Ruvj cwi w`wzi mwp nqib| Zvi GKgv t` Kvi Y iex`bv\_ mvinZ`K tKvfbv fite ivRbwzi mvt\_ m`u`<sup>3</sup> Ktibib|*

6. *bvRe gvndRi mvinZ`i nekRbxZv Avi iPbv`kj xi D`PgvM<sup>P</sup> Kvi tY Edward gse` Ktib* Naguib Mahfouz is not only a Hugo and a Dickens, but also a Galsworthy, a Mann, a Zola, and a Jules Romains.'<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> www.penguinrandomhouse.com

<sup>2</sup> cB

<sup>3</sup> www.penguinrandomhouse.com



MtelYvKtg<sup>9</sup> gva`tg thgb Zv`i tevSv mnR nte tZgb Zv`i mvinZ`Kg<sup>9</sup>I nelqe`  
m<sup>u</sup>úK<sup>9</sup> cvVK frtjv Kti eStZ cvi te| Zv`i m<sup>u</sup>óKgB Zv`i hMveL`vZ mvinuZ`Kti  
Avmtb mgvmbx Kti tQ| Zv`i wj Lub, Zv`i wPŠí, Zv`i tPZbvB gvbtj i gtb tk<sup>9</sup> tZji  
RvqMvq eim tqtQ|

G MtelYv t<sub>-</sub>tK G nelq<sup>u</sup>U `úó nqtqQ, b<sup>u</sup>Re gvndR I iex`bv\_ VvKz `w<sup>u</sup> wfbce  
gv<sup>u</sup> t<sub>-</sub>tk I wfbemgtq Rb<sup>u</sup>M<sup>u</sup>Y Kti tQb, m<sup>u</sup>zivs Zv`i M<sup>u</sup>í i nelqe`i gv<sup>u</sup>S wfbzv  
cwi j<sup>u</sup>Y<sup>u</sup> nte GUVB `rfv<sup>u</sup>ek| Zvicti I c<sup>u</sup>ket<sub>-</sub>tK hvq `R<sup>u</sup>ti gta` tK tk<sup>9</sup> ? mvg<sup>u</sup>M<sup>u</sup>K  
w<sup>u</sup> K t<sub>-</sub>tK w<sup>u</sup>Pvi -w<sup>u</sup>ek<sup>u</sup> Y Kti tk<sup>9</sup> Z<sup>u</sup> w<sup>u</sup>Y<sup>u</sup> Kiv m<sup>u</sup>Z`B GK<sup>u</sup>U K<sup>u</sup>Wb e`v<sup>u</sup>cv i |

Zey GB `f cwi m<sup>u</sup>ti Z<sub>-</sub>v tQvUM<sup>u</sup>í i Av<sup>u</sup>z<sup>u</sup>bvq ifc-<sup>u</sup>w<sup>u</sup>P<sup>u</sup>í, nelq w<sup>u</sup>be<sup>u</sup>P<sup>u</sup>tb, i P<sup>u</sup>bv<sup>u</sup>k<sup>u</sup>j xi  
gva<sup>u</sup>h<sup>u</sup>m<sup>u</sup>tev<sup>u</sup>wi w<sup>u</sup>ek<sup>u</sup>gv<sup>u</sup>ti tQvUM<sup>u</sup>í m<sup>u</sup>ó<sup>u</sup>tZ b<sup>u</sup>Re gvndR AZ`š<sup>u</sup> `y<sup>u</sup>Zvi cwi Pq w<sup>u</sup> tqtQb|  
Z<sup>u</sup>í M<sup>u</sup>í <sub>-</sub>tj v<sup>u</sup>Z thgb w<sup>u</sup>gkixq b<sup>u</sup>bv m<sup>u</sup>gm<sup>u</sup>vi nelq D<sup>u</sup>tV G<sup>u</sup>tm<sup>u</sup>Q tZgvb cv<sup>u</sup>ö<sup>u</sup>Z` mvin<sup>u</sup>tZ`i  
nelqe`I Z<sup>u</sup>í M<sup>u</sup>í j<sup>u</sup> Kiv hvq|

Ab<sup>u</sup> w<sup>u</sup> tK iex`bv\_ VvKz<sup>u</sup> i M<sup>u</sup>í <sub>-</sub>tj v<sup>u</sup>Z nelq <sup>u</sup>e<sup>u</sup>P<sup>u</sup>í i e<sup>u</sup>g<sup>u</sup>w<sup>u</sup>í KZv <sub>-</sub>vK<sup>u</sup>tj I Zv tKej B  
t`kixq t<sup>u</sup>c<sup>u</sup>ö<sup>u</sup> tZ i w<sup>u</sup>PZ| Avi mvg<sup>u</sup>M<sup>u</sup>RK nelq tK c<sup>u</sup>avb` t`qv nqtqQ|

ZvB GB `f cwi m<sup>u</sup>ti i g<sup>u</sup>j<sup>u</sup> v<sup>u</sup>qtb G K<sub>-</sub>v ejv hvq iex`bv<sub>-</sub>i M<sup>u</sup>í i tP<sup>u</sup>q b<sup>u</sup>Re gvndR i  
M<sup>u</sup>í w<sup>u</sup>ek<sup>u</sup>gv<sup>u</sup>ti w<sup>u</sup> K t<sub>-</sub>tK A<sup>u</sup>tbKUVB G<sup>u</sup>M<sup>u</sup>tq|

## MƏSCUÄ

1. msiryß i ex`a el eWÄ, i ex`a RxebK\_v, c fviZK gvi gLvcva`vq, Avb` cveij kım, Kj KvZv, 1388 e½vã |
2. meR#bi i ex`bv\_, Aa`vcK i fvi/i PµeZ®, i ex`a fvi Zx vekje`vj q, Kj KvZv, 1422 e½vã |
3. tQvUM#i i wki ifc cÜvcteP i ex`Mı, Avg` i wdK, Avb` cKvk, evsj v`k, KımZ®, 1385 e½vã |
4. Mı „Q, i ex`bv\_ VvKž, vek fvi Zx MšbuefıM, Kj KvZv, 1388 e½vã |
5. i ex`bv\_ VvKž i Rxeb`şZ, vek fvi Zx MšbuefıM, Kj KvZv, 1380 e½vã |
6. Avj -Rımi gv, Avm-mıymı qv, AvZ-Zj xK, ZınZvj wghvj w, hıvKž wı v° |
7. Midaq Alley, published December 1<sup>st</sup> 1947 by Anchor, Cairo, Egypt
8. Children of Gebelawi, published in 1959 Cairo, Egypt
9. The Beggar, published in 1965 Cairo, Egypt
10. The Thief and the Dogs, published in 1961 Cairo, Egypt
11. Mirmar, published in 1967 Cairo, Egypt
12. Naguib Mahfouz's Egypt: Exitement Thems in his writings, by Hayim Gordon , 1990
13. The Cairo of Naguib Mahfouz, By Brilta Ieva , Cairo, Egypt 1994
14. kımışb#KZb, i ex`a i Pbvej x, PZžK LĐ (cYgyY; Kıj KvZv; 1360) |
15. c fviZK gvi gLvcva`vq, i ex`a Rxebx, c g LĐ (mstkwıaZ ms`ı Y; Kıj KvZv 1367) |
16. hıv x QıDıbi w#P: bımRe gvndR, Abıv` : Gımvb hıvBi, tiv`j v cKvkbx, cKvkKıj - 2009, XıKv, evsj v`k |
17. ŐbvRıe gvndžRi tQvUMı Ő Abıv` : Avımvb mıvBıq`, A`Wb`cveij #Kkb, cKvkKıj : tdeıvıx-2001, 22 tm\_b evıMPv, XıKv-1000 |
18. gıxi tPşajx 1984 : i Pbvej x-ZZıq LĐ | XıKv : evsj v GKv#Wgx |
19. c eıvaP`#tNıv | 1973 : i ex`bv`\_i fılv l mıvıZ` | Kj KvZv : ifcv |
20. %ıq` AvKıg tıv#mb 1984 : evsj v`#ki mıvıZ` l Ab`vb` c#½ | XıKv : evsj v GKv#Wgx |
21. #`tek evq 1978 : i ex`a l Zıı Avı`M` | Kj KvZv : tK.ıc evıPıx A`vŪ tKıv#ıvıb |
22. evsj v GKv#Wıgi w#te`b : i ex`bv\_ VvKž, 2011 | XıKv : evsj v GKv#Wgx |

23. *Amq` AvKig tnvmb 1981 : ieb`bv`\_i Dcb`vm : tPZbv`j vK I wk`i fC| XvKv : XvKv  
mek`e`vj q|*
24. *eyt`e emy1962 : K\_vmmvZ`| Kj KvZv : wD GR|*
25. *Rxeb`Z : ieb`bv`\_ VvKz, dv`y 1421| Aemi, evsj vevRvi, XvKv|*
26. *ieb`bv`\_ : LtM`bv`\_ P`Fvcv`vq, e/vã 1348| Rqk`c`yKvj q, 165, KYP`qvij m óU,  
Kij KvZv|*
27. *ieb`bv`\_ : ÓRxeb`Z : GK, gvtj Kv teMg, wtm`f 2012| ga` cKvkbx, XvKv|*
28. *ieb`bv`\_ : Avbm`y`v`v`v, evB`k k`eY 1375| óU I tqR, evsj vevRvi, XvKv|*
29. Masterworks of Asian Literature in comparative perspective: A Guide of teaching, By Barbara Stolen Miller, M.E.Sharpe 1994
30. Rabindranath Tagore: Universality and Tradition.By Patrick colm Hogan Lalita Pandit, Fairleign University press, 2003
31. Naguib Mahfouz: From Regional Fame to Global Recognition By Michael Beard , 1985
32. Naguib Mahfouz : The Pursuit of Meaning By Rasheed EL-Enany, 1990
33. Rabindranath Tagore: The Greatest of Bauls of Bengal, The Journal of Asian Studies,Volume-19, Issue November 1959
34. Rabindranath Tagore and The politics of friendship: South Asia, Journal of South Asian Studies.
35. Rabindranath Tagore: The poetics of landscape, Journal of victorian culture online.
36. Islamic Fundamentalism and The intellectuals: The case of Naguib Mahfouz, Fauzi M.Najjar: page 139-168, Published 23Feb 2007
37. Naguib Mahfouz AS I Knew Him: Palestine-Israel Journal, vo-13, Published Nov 2007
38. The Early Novels of Naguib Mahfouz: Images of modern Egypt, Gaineville: up to Florida 1995
39. Nineteenth Century *cw`Kvq g`y`v`b`i`i m`ú`K`Zv`u (ieb`bv`\_ VvKz) fvebv,  
Kij KvZv 1357*
40. *1938 G P`t`bi c`Z Rvcv`bi AZ`v`P`i`i c`Zev` | G c`h`½ ieb`bv`\_ tbv, wP`K tj tLb:  
wishing your people whom I love, not success, but remorse, Kij KvZv 1363|*
41. President pays tribute to Mahfouz' BBC News, 30 August 2006

42. Naguib Mahfouz (1911-2006)' The American University in Cairo Press, AUC Press, Retrieved 26 october 2013
43. Award Ceremony Speech' Nobel Prize, org.Nobel Media. Retrieved 24 october 2013
44. Los Angeles Times , August 31, 2006, p. A1, pp. A6-7; New York Times , August 31, 2006, p. A21; Times (London), August 31, 2006, p. 55; *Washington Post* , August 31, 2006, p. A1, p. A15
45. The ARAMCO WORLD MAGAZINE MARCH- APRIL, 1989